Vol. I.

C. Grignion Sculp.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

Peregrine Pickle.

In which are included,

MEMOIRS

OF A

LADY OF QUALITY.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

Reſpicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, & veras hinc ducere voces.
HOR.

The FOURTH EDITION.

LONDON:
Printed for R. BALDWIN, N°. 47. and ROBINSON and ROBERTS, N°. 25. in Pater-noſter-Row; and T. BECKET and T. CADELL, in the Strand.
MDCCLXIX.

45.
4 12
73

ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE

SECOND EDITION.

AT length Peregrine Pickle makes his appearance in a new edition, in ſpite of all the art and induſtry that were uſed to ſtifle him in the birth, by certain bookſellers and others, who were at uncommon pains to miſrepreſent the work and calumniate the author.

The performance was decried as an immoral piece, and a ſcurrilous libel; the author was charged with having defamed the characters of particular perſons, to whom he lay under conſiderable obligations: and ſome formidable criticks declared that the book was void of humour, character and ſentiment.

Theſe charges, had they been ſupported by proof, would have certainly damned the writer and all his works; and even unſupported as they were, had an unfavourable

effect with the public: but, luckily for him, his real character was not unknown; and some readers were determined to judge for themselves, rather than trust implicitly to the allegations of his enemies. The book was found not altogether unworthy of their recommendation: a very large impression has been sold in England: another was bought up in a neighbouring kingdom: the work has been translated into the French language; and the demand for the original lately encreased in England. It was the author's duty, therefore, as well as his interest, to oblige the public with this edition, which he has endeavoured to render less unworthy of their acceptance, by retrenching the superfluities of the first, reforming its manners, and correcting its expression. Divers unintersting incidents are wholly suppressed: some humourous scenes he has endeavoured to heighten, and he flatters himself that he has expunged every adventure, phrase and insinuation that could be construed by the most delicate reader into a trespass upon the rules of decorum.

He owns with contrition, that in one or two instances, he gave way too much to the suggestions of personal resentment, and represented characters as they appeared to him at that time, through the exaggerating medium of prejudice: but he has in this impression

preſſion endeavoured to make atonement for theſe extravagances. Howſoever he may have erred in point of judgment or diſcretion, he defies the whole world to prove that he was ever guilty of one act of malice, ingratitude or diſhonour. This declaration he may be permitted to make without incurring the imputation of vanity or preſumption, conſidering the numerous ſhafts of envy, rancour and revenge, that have lately, both in private and in public, been levelled at his reputation.

Note, The two letters relating to the Memoirs of a Lady of quality, inſerted at the beginning of the third volume, were ſent to the editor by a perſon of honour.

THE CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

CHAP. I.

AN account of Mr. Gamaliel Pickle. *The diſpoſition of his ſiſter deſcribed. He yields to her ſolicitations, and retires to the country.* Page 1.

CHAP. II.

He is made acquainted with the characters of Commodore Trunnion *and his adherents; meets with them by accident, and contracts an intimacy with that commander.* p. 6

CHAP. III.

Mrs. Grizzle *exerts herſelf in finding a proper match for her brother; who is accordingly introduced to the young lady, whom he marries in due ſeaſon.* p. 20

CHAP.

CONTENTS of VOL. I.

CHAP. IV.

The behaviour of Mrs. Grizzle *at the wedding, with an account of the gueſts.* p. 25

CHAP. V.

Mrs. Pickle *aſſumes the reins of government in her own family; her ſiſter-in-law undertakes an enterprize of great moment; but is for ſome time diverted from her purpoſe, by a very intereſting conſideration.* p. 29

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Grizzle *is indefatigable in gratifying her ſiſter's longings.* Peregrine *is born, and managed contrary to the directions and remonſtrances of his aunt, who is diſguſted upon that account; and reſumes the plan which ſhe had before rejected.* p. 36

CHAP. VII.

Divers ſtratagems are invented and put in practice, in order to overcome the obſtinacy of Trunnion, *who at length is teazed and tortured into the nooſe of wedlock.* p. 48

CHAP. VIII.

Preparations are made for the commodore's wedding, which is delayed by an accident that hurried him the Lord knows whither. p. 54

CHAP. IX.

He is found by the lieutenant; reconducted to his own houſe; married to Mrs. Grizzle, *who meets with*

with a ſmall misfortune in the night, and aſſerts her prerogative next morning: in conſequence of which her huſband's eye is endangered. p. 64

CHAP. X.

The commodore being in ſome caſes reſtif, his lady has recourſe to artifice in the eſtabliſhment of her throne; ſhe exhibits ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the unſpeakable joy of Trunnion, *who nevertheleſs is baulked in his expectation.* p. 72

CHAP. XI.

Mrs. Trunnion *erects a tyranny in the gariſon, while her huſband conceives an affection for his nephew* Perry, *who manifeſts a peculiarity of diſpoſition even in his tender years.* p. 79

CHAP. XII.

Peregrine *is ſent to a boarding-ſchool, becomes remarkable for his genius and ambition.* p. 84

CHAP. XIII.

The commodore takes Peregrine *under his own care. The boy arrives at the gariſon;—is ſtrangely received by his own mother;—enters into a confederacy with* Hatchway *and* Pipes, *and executes a couple of waggiſh enterprizes upon his aunt.* p. 93

CHAP. XIV.

He is alſo by their device engaged in an adventure with the exciſeman, who does not find his account in his own drollery. p. 105

CHAP.

CONTENTS of VOL. I.

CHAP. XV.

The commodore detects the machinations of the conſpirators, and hires a tutor for Peregrine, *whom he ſettles at* Wincheſter *ſchool.* p. 113

CHAP. XVI.

Peregrine *diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his ſchool-fellows, expoſes his tutor, and attracts the particular notice of the maſter.* p. 119

CHAP. XVII.

He is concerned in a dangerous adventure with a certain gardener; ſublimes his ideas, commences gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet. p. 125

CHAP. XVIII.

He inquires into the ſituation of the young lady with whom he is enamoured; elopes from ſchool; is found by the lieutenant, conveyed to Wincheſter, *and ſends a letter with a copy of verſes to his miſtreſs.* p. 135

CHAP. XIX.

His meſſenger meets with a misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary expedient that is attended with ſtrange conſequences. p. 146

CHAP. XX.

Peregrine *is ſummoned to attend his uncle, is more and more hated by his own mother; appeals to his*

his father, whose condescension is defeated by the dominion of his wife. p. 153

CHAP. XXI.

Trunnion *is enraged at the conduct of* Pickle. Peregrine *resents the injustice of his mother, to whom he explains his sentiments in a letter. Is entered at the University of* Oxford, *where he signalizes himself as a youth of an enterprising genius.* p. 159

CHAP. XXII.

He is insulted by his tutor, whom he lampoons; makes considerable progress in polite literature; and in an excursion to Windsor *meets with* Emilia *by accident, and is very coldly received.* p. 167

CHAP. XXIII.

After sundry unsuccessful efforts, he finds means to come to an explanation with his mistress; and a reconciliation ensues. p. 176

CHAP. XXIV.

He atchieves an adventure at the assembly, and quarrels with his governor. p. 187

CHAP. XXV.

He receives a letter from his aunt, breaks with the commodore, and disobliges the licutenant, who, nevertheless, undertakes his cause. p. 195

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

He becomes melancholy and deſpondent; is favoured with a condeſcending letter from his uncle, reconciles himſelf to his governor, and ſets out with Emilia *and her friend for Mrs.* Gauntlet's *houſe.* p. 203

CHAP. XXVII.

They meet with a dreadful alarm on the road, arrive at their journey's end. Peregrine *is introduced to* Emily's *brother, theſe two young gentlemen miſunderſtand each other.* Pickle *departs for the gariſon.* p. 210

CHAP. XXVIII.

Peregrine *is overtaken by Mr.* Gauntlet, *with whom he fights a duel, and contracts an intimate friendſhip. He arrives at the gariſon, and finds his mother as implacable as ever. He is inſulted by his brother* Gam, *whoſe preceptor he diſciplines with a horſe-whip.* p. 218

CHAP. XXIX.

He projects a plan of revenge, which is executed againſt the curate. p. 227

CHAP. XXX.

Mr. Sackbut *and his pupil conſpire againſt* Peregrine, *who being apprized of their deſign by his ſiſter, takes meaſures for counterworking their ſcheme, which is executed by miſtake upon Mr.* Gauntlet. *This young ſoldier meets with a cordial*

dial reception from the commodore, who generouſly decoys him into his own intereſt. p. 233

CHAP. XXXI.

The two young gentlemen diſplay their talents for gallantry, in the courſe of which they are involved in a ludicrous circumſtance of diſtreſs, and afterwards take vengeance on the author of their miſhap. p. 243

CHAP. XXXII.

The commodore ſends a challenge to Gamaliel, *and is impoſed upon by a waggiſh invention of the lieutenant,* Peregrine *and* Gauntlet. p. 250

CHAP. XXXIII.

Peregrine *takes leave of his aunt and ſiſter, ſets out from the gariſon, parts with his uncle and* Hatchway *on the road, and with his governor arrives in ſafety at* Dover. p. 255

CHAP. XXXIV.

He adjuſts the method of his correſpondence with Gauntlet; *meets by accident with an* Italian *Charlatan, and a certain apothecary, who proves to be a noted character.* p. 259

THE

THE ADVENTURES OF Peregrine Pickle.

CHAP. I.

An account of Mr. Gamaliel Pickle. The diſpoſition of his ſiſter deſcribed. He yields to her ſolicitations, and returns to the country.

IN a certain county of England, bounded on one ſide by the ſea, and at the diſtance of one hundred miles from the metropolis, lived Gamaliel Pickle, Eſq; the father of that hero whoſe adventures we propoſe to record. He was the ſon of a merchant in London, who (like Rome) from ſmall beginnings, had raiſed himſelf to the higheſt honours of the city, and acquired a plentiful fortune, though, to his infinite regret, he died before it amounted to a Plum, conjuring his ſon, as he reſpected the laſt injunction of a

parent, to imitate his induſtry and adhere to his maxims, until he ſhould have made up the deficiency, which was a ſum conſiderably leſs than fifteen thouſand pounds.

This pathetic remonſtrance had the deſired effect upon his repreſentative, who ſpared no pains to fulfil the requeſt of the deceaſed; but exerted all the capacity with which nature had endowed him, in a ſeries of efforts, which, however, did not ſucceed; for by that time he had been fifteen years in trade, he found himſelf five thouſand pounds worſe than he was when he firſt took poſſeſſion of his father's effects: a circumſtance that affected him ſo nearly, as to detach his inclinations from buſineſs, and induce him to retire from the world, to ſome place where he might at leiſure deplore his misfortunes, and, by frugality, ſecure himſelf from want, and the apprehenſions of a jail, with which his imagination was inceſſantly haunted. He was often heard to expreſs his fears of coming upon the pariſh; and to bleſs God, that, on account of his having been ſo long a houſekeeper, he was intitled to that proviſion. In ſhort, his talents were not naturally active, and there was a ſort of inconſiſtency in his character; for, with all the deſire of amaſſing which any citizen could poſſibly entertain, he was encumbred by a certain indolence and ſluggiſhneſs that prevailed over every intereſted conſideration, and even hindered him from profiting by that ſingleneſs of apprehenſion, and moderation of appetites, which have ſo frequently conduced to the acquiſition of immenſe fortunes, qualities which he poſſeſſed in a very remarkable degree. Nature, in all probability, had mixed little or nothing inflammable in his compoſition; or, whatever ſeeds

of

of exceſs ſhe might have ſown within him, were effectually ſtifled and deſtroyed by the auſterity of his education.

The ſallies of his youth, far from being inordinate or criminal, never exceeded the bounds of that decent jollity which an extraordinary pot, on extraordinary occaſions, may be ſuppoſed to have produced in a club of ſedate book-keepers, whoſe imaginations were neither very warm nor luxuriant. Little ſubject to refined ſenſations, he was ſcarce ever diſturbed with violent emotions of any kind. The paſſion of love never interrupted his tranquillity; and if, as Mr. Creech ſays after Horace,

Not to admire is all the art, I know,
To make men happy, and to keep them ſo;

Mr. Pickle was undoubtedly poſſeſſed of that invaluable ſecret; at leaſt, he was never known to betray the fainteſt ſymptom of tranſport, except one evening at the club, where he obſerved, with ſome demonſtrations of vivacity, that he had dined upon a delicate loin of veal.

Notwithſtanding this appearance of phlegm, he could not help feeling his diſappointments in trade; and upon the failure of a certain underwriter, by which he loſt five hundred pounds, declared his deſign of relinquiſhing buſineſs, and retiring to the country. In this reſolution he was comforted and encouraged by his only ſiſter Mrs. Grizzle, who had managed his family, ſince the death of his father, and was now in the thirtieth year of her maidenhood, with a fortune of five thouſand pounds, and a large ſtock of œconomy and devotion.

Theſe qualifications, one would think, might have been the means of abridging the term of

her celibacy, as ſhe never expreſſed any averſion to wedlock; but, it ſeems, ſhe was too delicate in her choice, to find a mate to her inclination in the city: for I cannot ſuppoſe that ſhe remained ſo long unſolicited; though the charms of her perſon were not altogether enchanting, nor her manner over and above agreeable. Excluſive of a very wan (not to call it ſallow) complexion, which perhaps was the effect of her virginity and mortification, ſhe had a caſt in her eyes that was not at all engaging, and ſuch an extent of mouth, as no art or affectation could contract into any proportionable dimenſion: then her piety was rather peeviſh than reſigned, and did not in the leaſt diminiſh a certain ſtatelineſs in her demeanor and converſation, that delighted in communicating the importance and honour of her family, which, by the bye, was not to be traced two generations back, by all the power of heraldry or tradition.

She ſeemed to have renounced all the ideas ſhe had acquired before her father ſerved the office of ſheriff; and the æra which regulated the dates of all her obſervations, was the mayoralty of her papa. Nay, ſo ſolicitous was this good lady for the ſupport and propagation of the family-name, that, ſuppreſſing every ſelfiſh motive, ſhe actually prevailed upon her brother to combat with his own diſpoſition, and even ſurmount it ſo far, as to declare a paſſion for the perſon whom he afterwards wedded, as we ſhall ſee in the ſequel. Indeed, ſhe was the ſpur that inſtigated him in all his extraordinary undertakings; and I queſtion whether or not he would have been able to diſengage himſelf from that courſe of life in which he had ſo long mechanically moved, unleſs he had been rouſed and actuated by her inceſſant exhortations. London, ſhe obſerved, was a receptacle of iniquity,

quity, where an honeſt unſuſpecting man was every day in danger of falling a ſacrifice to craft; where innocence was expoſed to continual temptations, and virtue eternally perſecuted by malice and ſlander; where every thing was ruled by caprice and corruption, and merit utterly diſcouraged and deſpiſed. This laſt imputation ſhe pronounced with ſuch emphaſis and chagrin, as plainly denoted how far ſhe conſidered herſelf as an example of what ſhe advanced; and really the charge was juſtified by the conſtructions that were put upon her retreat by her female friends, who, far from imputing it to the laudable motives that induced her, inſinuated, in ſarcaſtic commendations, that ſhe had good reaſon to be diſſatisfied with a place where ſhe had been ſo long overlooked; and that it was certainly her wiſeſt courſe to make her laſt effort in the country, where, in all probability, her talents would be leſs eclipſed, and her fortune more attractive.

Be this as it will, her admonitions, though they were powerful enough to convince, would have been inſufficient to overcome the langour and *vis inertiæ* of her brother, had ſhe not reinforced her arguments, by calling in queſtion the credit of two or three merchants, with whom he was embarked in trade.

Alarmed at theſe hints of intelligence, he exerted himſelf effectually, he withdrew his money from trade, and laying it out in Bank-ſtock and India-bonds, removed to a houſe in the country, which his father had built near the ſea-ſide, for the convenience of carrying on a certain branch of traffick in which he had been deeply concerned.

Here then Mr. Pickle fixed his habitation for life, in the ſix and-thirtieth year of his age; and

though the pangs he felt at parting with his intimate companions, and quitting all his former connexions, were not quite ſo keen as to produce any dangerous diſorder in his conſtitution, he did not fail to be extremely diſconcerted at his firſt entrance into a ſcene of life to which he was totally a ſtranger. Not but that he met with abundance of people in the country, who in conſideration of his fortune, courted his acquaintance, and breathed nothing but friendſhip and hoſpitality: yet even the trouble of receiving and returning theſe civilities, was an intolerable fatigue to a man of his habits and diſpoſition. He therefore left the care of the ceremonial to his ſiſter, who indulged herſelf in all the pride of formality, while he himſelf having made a diſcovery of a public houſe in the neighbourhood, went thither every evening, and enjoyed his pipe and can; being very well ſatisfied with the behaviour of the landlord, whoſe communicative temper was a great comfort to his own taciturnity; for he ſhunned all ſuperfluity of ſpeech, as much as he avoided any other unneceſſary expence.

CHAP. II.

He is made acquainted with the characters of Commodore Trunnion *and his adherents; meets with them by accident, and contracts an intimacy with that commander.*

THIS loquacious publican ſoon gave him ſketches of all the characters in the county; and, among others, deſcribed that of his next neighbour, Commodore Trunnion, which was altogether ſingular and odd. "The commodore and

and your worſhip (ſaid he) will in a ſhort time be hand and glove; he has a power of money; and ſpends like a prince—that is in his own way—for to be ſure he is a little humourſome, as the ſaying is, and ſwears woundily; though I'll be ſworn he means no more harm than a ſucking babe. Lord help us! it will do your honour s heart good to hear him tell a ſtory, as how he lay along-ſide of the French, yard-arm and yard-arm, board and board, and of heaving grapplings, and ſtink-pots and grapes, and round and double-headed partridges. crows and carters—Laud have mercy upon us! he has been a great warrior in his time, and loſt an eye and a heel in the ſervice—Then he does not live like any other Chriſtian land-man; but keeps gariſon in his houſe, as if he were in the midſt of his enemies, and makes his ſervants turn out in the night, watch and watch (as he calls it) all the year round. His habitation is defended by a ditch, over which he has laid a draw bridge, and planted his court-yard with patereroes continually loaded with ſhot, under the direction of one Mr. Hatchway, who had one of his legs ſhot away, while he acted as lieutenant on board of the commodore's ſhip; and now being on half-pay, lives with him as his companion. The lieutenant is a very brave man, a great joker, and, as the ſaying is, hath got the length of his commander's foot—Though he has another favourite in the houſe called Tom Pipes, that was his boatſwain's mate, and now keeps the ſervants in order. Tom is a man of few words, but an excellent hand at a ſong concerning the boatſwain's whiſtle, huſſle-cap and chuck-farthing--there is not ſuch another pipe in the county—So that the commodore lives

very happy in his own manner; thof he be ſometimes thrown into perilous paſſions and quandaries, by the application of his poor kinſmen, whom he can't abide, becauſe as how ſome of them were the firſt occaſion of his going to ſea. Then he ſweats with agony at the ſight of an attorney; juſt for all the world, as ſome people have an antipathy to a cat; for it ſeems he was once at law, for ſtriking one of his officers, and caſt in a ſwinging ſum. He is, moreover, exceedingly afflicted with goblins that diſturb his reſt, and keep ſuch a racket in his houſe, that you would think (God bleſs us!) all the devils in hell had broke looſe upon him. It was no longer ago than laſt year about this time, that he was tormented the live-long night by two miſchievous ſpirits that got into his chamber, and played a thouſand pranks about his hammock, (for there is not one bed within his walls.) Well, Sir, he rung his bell, called up all his ſervants, got lights, and made a thorough ſearch; but the devil a goblin was to be found. He had no ſooner turned in again, and the reſt of the family gone to ſleep, than the foul fiends began their game anew. The commodore got up in the dark, drew his cutlaſs, and attacked them both ſo manfully, that, at five minutes, every thing in the apartment went to pieces. The lieutenant hearing the noiſe, came to his aſſiſtance. Tom Pipes being told what was the matter, lighted his match, and going down to the yard, fired all the patereroes as ſignals of diſtreſs. Well to be ſure, the whole pariſh was in a pucker: ſome thought the French had landed; others imagined the commodore's houſe was beſet by thieves: for my own part, I called up two dragoons that are quartered upon

me;

me; and they ſwore with deadly oaths, it was a gang of ſmugglers engaged with a party of their regiment that lies in the next village; and mounting their horſes like luſty fellows, rode up into the country as faſt as their beaſts could carry them. Ah, Maſter! theſe are hard times, when an induſtrious body cannot earn his bread, without fear of the gallows. Your worſhip's father (God reſt his ſoul!) was a good gentleman, and as well reſpected in this pariſh, as e'er a he that walks upon neat's leather. And if your honour ſhould want a ſmall parcel of fine tea, or a few anchors of right Nantz, I'll be bound you ſhall be furniſhed to your heart's content. But, as I was ſaying, the hubbub continued 'till morning, when the parſon being ſent for, conjured the ſpirits into the Red Sea; and the houſe has been pretty quiet ever ſince. True it is, Mr. Hatchway makes a mock of the whole affair; and told his commander in this very bleſſed ſpot, that the two goblins were no other than a couple of jack-daws which had fallen down the chimney, and made a flapping with their wings up and down the apartment. But the commodore, who is very choleric, and does not like to be jeered, fell into a main high paſſion, and ſtormed like a perfect hurricane, ſwearing that he knew a devil from a jack-daw as well as e'er a man in the three kingdoms. He owned, indeed, that the birds were found, but denied that they were the occaſion of the uproar. For my own part, Maſter, I believe much may be ſaid on both ſides of the queſtion; thof to be ſure, the devil is always going about, as the ſaying is."

This circumſtantial account, extraordinary as it was, never altered one feature in the counte-

nance of Mr. Pickle, who having heard it to an end, took the pipe from his mouth, ſaying with a look of infinite ſagacity and deliberation, "I do ſuppoſe he is of the Corniſh Trunnions. What ſort of a woman is his ſpouſe?" "Spouſe! cried the other; odds heart! I don't think he would marry the queen of Sheba. Lack-a-day! Sir, he won't ſuffer his own maids to lie in the gariſon, but turns them into an out-houſe, every night before the watch is ſet. Bleſs your honour's ſoul; he is, as it were, a very oddiſh kind of a gentleman Your worſhip would have ſeen him before now; for, when he is well, he and my good maſter Hatchway come hither every evening, and drink a couple of canns of rumbo apiece; but he has been confined to his houſe this fortnight by a plaguy fit of the gout, which, I'll aſſure your worſhip, is a good penny out of my pocket."

At that inſtant, Mr. Pickle's ears were ſaluted with ſuch a ſtrange noiſe, as even diſcompoſed the muſcles of his face, which gave immediate indications of alarm. This compoſition of notes at firſt reſembled the crying of quails, and croaking of bull-frogs; but as it approached nearer, he could diſtinguiſh articulate ſounds pronounced with great violence, in ſuch a cadence as one would expect to hear from a human creature ſcolding through the organs of an aſs. It was neither ſpeaking nor braying, but a ſurpriſing mixture of both, employed in the utterance of terms abſolutely unintelligible to our wondering merchant, who had juſt opened his mouth to expreſs his curioſity, when the landlord, ſtarting up at the well known ſound, cried, "Odd's niggers! there is the commodore with his company, as ſure as I live;"

live;" and with his apron began to wipe the duſt off an elbow chair placed at one ſide of the fire, and kept ſacred for the eaſe and convenience of this infirm commander. While he was thus occupied, a voice ſtill more uncouth than the former, bauled aloud, "Ho! the houſe, a hoy!" Upon which the publican, clapping a hand to each ſide of his head, with his thumbs fixed to his ears, rebellowed in the ſame tone, which he had learned to imitate, "Hilloah." The voice again exclaimed, "Have you got any attorneys aboard?" and when the landlord replied, "No, no;" this man of ſtrange expectation came in ſupported by his two dependants, and diſplayed a figure every way anſwerable to the oddity of his character. He was in ſtature at leaſt ſix feet high, though he had contracted an habit of ſtooping, by living ſo long on board; his complexion was tawny, and his aſpect rendered hideous by a large ſcar acroſs his noſe, and a patch that covered the place of one eye. Being ſeated in his chair, with great formality the landlord complimented him upon his being able to come abroad again; and having, in a whiſper, communicated the name of his fellow gueſt, whom the commodore already knew by report, went to prepare, with all imaginable diſpatch, the firſt allowance of his favourite liquor, in three ſeparate canns, (for each was accommodated with his own portion apart) while the lieutenant ſat down on the blind ſide of his commander; and Tom Pipes, knowing his diſtance, with great modeſty took his ſtation in the rear. After a pauſe of ſome minutes, the converſation was begun by this ferocious chief, who fixing his eye upon the lieutenant with a ſternneſs of counte-

nance not to be deſcribed, addreſſed him in theſe words: "D—n my eyes! Hatchway, I always took you to be a better ſeaman than to overſet our chaiſe in ſuch fair weather. Blood! didn't I tell you we were running bump aſhore, and bid you ſet in the lee-brace, and haul upon a wind?" "Yes, replied the other with an arch ſneer, I do confeſs as how you did give ſuch orders, after you had run us foul of a poſt, ſo as that the carriage lay along, and could not right herſelf." "I run you foul of a poſt! cried the commander; d—n my heart! you're a pretty dog an't you, to tell me ſo aboveboard to my face? Did I take charge of the chaiſe? Did I ſtand at the helm?" "No, anſwered Hatchway; I muſt confeſs you did not ſteer; but howſomever, you cunned all the way, and ſo, as you could not ſee how the land lay, being blind of your larboard eye, we were faſt aſhore, before you knew any thing of the matter. Pipes, who ſtood abaft, can teſtify the truth of what I ſay." "D—n my limbs! reſumed the commodore, I don't value what you or Pipes ſay a rope yarn. You're a couple of mutinous———I'll ſay no more; but, you ſhan't run your rig upon me, damn ye. I am the man that learnt you, Jack Hatchway, to ſplice a rope, and raiſe a perpendicular."

The lieutenant, who was perfectly well acquainted with the trim of his captain, did not chuſe to carry on the altercation any farther; but, taking up his cann, drank to the health of the ſtranger, who very courteouſly returned the compliment, without, however, preſuming to join in the converſation, which ſuffered a conſiderable pauſe. During this interruption, Mr. Hatch-

way's wit diſplayed itſelf in ſeveral practical jokes upon the commodore, with whom, he knew, it was dangerous to tamper in any other way. Being without the ſphere of his viſion, he ſecurely pilfered his tobacco, drank his rumbo, made wry faces, and (to uſe the vulgar phraſe) cocked his eye at him, to the no ſmall entertainment of the ſpectators, Mr. Pickle himſelf not excepted, who gave evident tokens of uncommon ſatisfaction at the dexterity of this marine pantomime.

Mean while, the captain's choler gradually ſubſided, and he was pleaſed to deſire Hatchway, by the familiar and friendly diminutive of Jack, to read a news-paper that lay on the table before him. This taſk was accordingly undertaken by the lame lieutenant, who among other paragraphs, read that which follows, with an elevation of voice that ſeemed to prognoſticate ſomething extraordinary. "We are informed, that admiral Bower will very ſoon be created a Britiſh peer, for his eminent ſervices during the war, particularly in his late engagement with the French fleet." Trunnion was thunderſtruck at this piece of intelligence. The mug dropt from his hand and ſhivered into a thouſand pieces; his eye gliſtened like that of a rattle-ſnake, and ſome minutes elapſed before he could pronounce, "Avaſt! overhaul that article again." It was no ſooner read the ſecond time, than ſmiting the table with his fiſt, he ſtarted up, and with the moſt violent emphaſis of rage and indignation, exclaimed, "D—n my heart and liver! 'tis a land lie, d'ye ſee; and I will maintain it to be a lie, from the ſprit-ſail-yard to the mizen top-ſail haulyards! Blood and thunder! Will. Bower a peer of this realm! a fellow of yeſterday, that

ſcarce

ſcarce knows a maſt from a manger; a ſnotty-noſe boy, whom I myſelf have ordered to the gun, for ſtealing eggs out of the hen-coops! and I Hawſer Trunnion, who commanded a ſhip before he could keep a reckoning, am laid aſide, d'ye ſee, and forgotten! If ſo be, as this be the caſe, there is a rotten plank in our conſtitution, which ought to be hove down and repaired, damn my eyes! For my own part, d'ye ſee, I was none of your Guinea pigs; I did not riſe in the ſervice by parliamenteering intereſt, or a handſome bitch of a wife. I was not hoiſted over the bellies of better men, nor ſtrutted athwart the quarter-deck in a laced doublet, and thingumbobs at the wriſts. Damn my limbs! I have been a hard-working man, and ſerved all offices on board from cook's ſhifter to the command of a veſſel. Here, you Tunley, there's the hand of a ſeaman, you dog." So ſaying he laid hold on the landlord's fiſt, and honoured him with ſuch a ſqueeze, as compelled him to roar with great vociferation, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the commodore, whoſe features were a little unbended, by this acknowledgment of his vigour; and he thus proceeded in a leſs outrageous ſtrain: "They make a damned noiſe about this engagement with the French: but, agad! it was no more than a bumboat battle, in compariſon with ſome that I have ſeen. There was old Rook and Jennings, and another whom I'll be damned before I name, that knew what fighting was. As for my own ſhare, d'ye ſee, I am none of thoſe that hollow in their own commendation: but if ſo be that I were minded to ſtand my own trumpeter, ſome of thoſe little fellows that hold their heads ſo high, would be taken all aback, as the ſaying is:

they would be aſhamed to ſhew their colours, d—n my eyes! I once lay eight glaſſes along-ſide of the Floor de Louſe, a French man of war, though her metal was heavier, and her complement larger by an hundred hands than mine. You, Jack Hatchway, damn ye, what d'ye grin at? D'ye think I tell a ſtory, becauſe you never heard it before?"

"Why, look ye, Sir, anſwered the lieutenant, I am glad to find you can ſtand your own trumpeter, on occaſion: thof I wiſh you would change the tune; for that is the ſame you have been piping every watch for theſe ten months paſt. Tunley himſelf will tell you, he has heard it five hundred times." "God forgive you, Mr. Hatchway, ſaid the landlord, interrupting him; as I'm an honeſt man and a houſekeeper, I never heard a ſyllab of the matter.

This declaration, though not ſtrictly true, was extremely agreeable to Mr. Trunnion, who, with an air of triumph, obſerved, "Aha! Jack, I thought I ſhould bring you up, with your gibes and your jokes, but ſuppoſe you had heard it before, is that any reaſon why it ſhouldn't be told to another perſon? There's the ſtranger, belike he has heard it five hundred times too; han't ye brother?" addreſſing himſelf to Mr. Pickle; who, replying with a look expreſſing curioſity, "No never;" he thus went on: "Well, you ſeem to be an honeſt, quiet ſort of a man; and therefore you muſt know, as I ſaid before. I fell in with a French man of war, Cape Finiſterre bearing about ſix leagues on the weather bow, and the chace three leagues to leeward, going before the wind: whereupon I ſet my ſtudding ſails, and coming up with her, hoiſted

hoiſted my jack and enſign and poured in a whole broadſide, before you could count three rattlins in the mizen ſhrouds; for I always keep a good look out, and love to have the firſt fire." "That I'll be ſworn, ſaid Hatchway: for the day we made the Triumph, you ordered the men to fire when ſhe was hull-to, by the ſame token we below pointed the guns at a flight of gulls; and I won a can of punch from the gunner, by killing the firſt bird." Exaſperated at this ſarcaſm, he replied with great vehemence, "You lie lubber! d—n your bones! what buſineſs have you to come always athwart my hauſe in this manner? You, Pipes, was upon deck, and can bear witneſs, whether or not I fired too ſoon. Speak, you blood of a ——, and that upon the word of a ſeaman: how did the chace bear of us, when I gave orders to fire?"

Pipes, who hitherto had ſat ſilent, being thus called upon to give his evidence, after diverſe ſtrange geſticulations, opened his mouth like a gaſping cod, and with a cadence like that of the eaſt wind ſinging through a cranny, pronounced, "Half a quarter of a league right upon our lee-beam." "Nearer, you porpuſs-fac'd ſwab! (cried the commodore) nearer by twelve fathom: but, howſomever, that's enough to prove the falſehood of Hatchway's jaw—and ſo, brother d'ye ſee, (turning to Mr. Pickle) I lay along-ſide of the Floor de Louſe, yard-arm and yard-arm, plying our great guns and ſmall arms, and heaving in ſtink-pots, powder-bottles, and hand-grenades, till our ſhot was all expended, double-headed, partridge and grape: then we loaded with iron crows, marlin ſpikes, and old nails, but finding the Frenchman took a great deal of drubbing,

drubbing, and that he had ſhot away all our rigging, and killed and wounded a great number of our men, d'ye ſee, I reſolved to run him on board upon his quarter, and ſo ordered our grapplings to be got ready; but Monſieur perceiving what we were about, filled his topſails and ſheered off, leaving us like a log upon the water, and our ſcuppers running with blood."

Mr. Pickle and the landlord paid ſuch extraordinary attention to the rehearſal of this exploit, that Trunnion was encouraged to entertain them with more ſtories of the ſame nature, after which he obſerved by way of encomium on the government, that all he had gained in the ſervice was a lame foot and the loſs of an eye. The lieutenant, who could not find in his heart to loſe any opportunity of being witty at the expence of his commander, gave a looſe to his ſatirical talent once more, ſaying, "I have heard as how you came by your lame foot, by having your upper decks overſtowed with liquor, whereby you became crank, and rolled, d'ye ſee, in ſuch a manner, that by a pitch of the ſhip, your ſtarboard heel was jammed in one of the ſcuppers; and as for the matter of your eye, that was knocked out by your own crew when the Lightning was paid off: there's poor Pipes, who was beaten into all the colours of the rainbow for taking your part, and giving you time to ſheer off; and I don't find as how you have rewarded him according as he deſerves." As the commodore could not deny the truth of theſe anecdotes, however unſeaſonably they were introduced, he affected to receive them with good humour, as jokes of the lieutenant's own inventing; and replied, "Ay, ay, Jack, every body knows your tongue is no ſlander; but,

but, howſomever, I'll work you to an oil for this, you dog." So ſaying, he lifted up one of his crutches, intending to lay it gently a-croſs Mr. Hatchway's pate; but Jack, with great agility, tilted up his wooden leg, with which he warded off the blow, to the no ſmall admiration of Mr. Pickle, and utter aſtoniſhment of the landlord, who, by the bye, had expreſſed the ſame amazement, at the ſame feat, at the ſame hour, every night for three months before. Trunnion then directing his eye to the boatſwain's mate, "You, Pipes, (ſaid he) do you go about and tell people that I did not reward you for ſtanding by me, when I was huſsled by thoſe rebellious rapſcallions; damn you, ha'n't you been rated on the books ever ſince?" Tom, who indeed had no words to ſpare, ſat ſmoaking his pipe with great indifference, and never dreamed of paying any regard to theſe interrogations, which being repeated and reinforced with many oaths, that (however) produced no effect, the commodore pulled out his purſe, ſaying, "Here you bitch's baby, here's ſomething better than a ſmart ticket;" and threw it at his ſilent deliverer, who received and pocketed his bounty, without the leaſt demonſtration of ſurprize or ſatisfaction; while the donor turning to Mr. Pickle, "You ſee, brother, (ſaid he) I make good the old ſaying, we ſailors get money like horſes, and ſpend it like aſſes; come, Pipes, let's have the boatſwain's whiſtle, and be jovial." This muſician accordingly applied to his mouth the ſilver inſtrument that hung at a button hole of his jacket, by a chain of the ſame metal, and though not quite ſo raviſhing as the pipe of Hermes, produced a ſound ſo loud and ſhrill, that the ſtranger (as it were inſtinctively) ſtopped his

his ears, to preſerve his organs of hearing from ſuch a dangerous invaſion. The prelude being thus executed, Pipes fixed his eyes upon the egg of an oſtrich that depended from the ceiling, and without once moving them from that object, performed the whole cantata in a tone of voice that ſeemed to be the joint iſſue of an Iriſh bag-pipe, and a ſow-gelder's horn; the commodore, the lieutenant and landlord joined in the chorus, repeating this elegant ſtanza,

Buſtle, buſtle, brave boys!
Let us ſing, let us toil,
And drink all the while,
Since labour's the price of our joys.

The third line was no ſooner pronounced, than the cann was lifted to every man's mouth with admirable uniformity; and the next word taken up at the end of their draught with a twang equally expreſſive and harmonious. In ſhort, the company began to underſtand one another; Mr. Pickle ſeemed to reliſh the entertainment, and a correſpondence immediately commenced between him and Trunnion, who ſhook him by the hand, drank to further acquaintance, and even invited him to a meſs of pork and peaſe in the gariſon. The compliment was returned, good fellowſhip prevailed, and the night was pretty far advanced, when the merchant's man arrived with a lanthorn to light his maſter home; upon which, the new friends parted, after a mutual promiſe of meeting next evening in the ſame place.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Mrs. Grizzle *exerts herſelf in finding a proper match for her brother; who is accordingly introduced to the young lady, whom he marries in due ſeaſon.*

I Have been the more circumſtantial in opening the character of Trunnion, becauſe he bears a conſiderable ſhare in the courſe of theſe memoirs; but, now it is high time to reſume the conſideration of Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſince her arrival in the country, had been engroſſed by a double care, namely, that of finding a ſuitable match for her brother, and a comfortable yoke-fellow for herſelf.

Neither was this aim the reſult of any ſiniſter or frail ſuggeſtion, but the pure dictates of that laudable ambition, which prompted her to the preſervation of the family name. Nay, ſo diſintereſted was ſhe in this purſuit, that, poſtponing her neareſt concern, or at leaſt leaving her own fate to the ſilent operation of her charms, ſhe laboured with ſuch indefatigable zeal in behalf of her brother, that before they had been three months ſettled in the country, the general topic of converſation in the neighbourhood, was an intended match between the rich Mr. Pickle and the fair Miſs Appleby, daughter of a gentleman who lived in the next pariſh, and who, though he had but little fortune to beſtow upon his children, had (to uſe his own phraſe) repleniſhed their veins with ſome of the beſt blood in the country.

This

This young lady, whoſe character and diſpoſition Mrs. Grizzle had inveſtigated to her own ſatisfaction, was deſtined for the ſpouſe of Mr. Pickle, and an overture accordingly made to her father, who being overjoyed at the propoſal, gave his conſent without heſitation, and even recommended the immediate execution of the project with ſuch eagerneſs, as ſeemed to indicate either a ſuſpicion of Mr. Pickle's conſtancy, or a diffidence of his own daughter's complexion, which, perhaps, he thought too ſanguine, to keep much longer cool. The previous point being thus ſettled, our merchant, at the inſtigation of Mrs. Grizzle, went to viſit his future father-in-law, and was introduced to the daughter, with whom he had, that ſame afternoon, an opportunity of being alone. What paſſed in that interview, I never could learn, though from the character of the ſuitor, the reader may juſtly conclude, that ſhe was not much teized with the impertinence of his addreſſes. He was not, I believe, the leſs welcome for that reaſon; certain it is, ſhe made no objection to his taciturnity, and when her father communicated his reſolution, acquieſced with the moſt pious reſignation. But, Mrs. Grizzle, in order to give the lady a more favourable idea of his intellects than what his converſation could poſſibly inſpire, was reſolved to dictate a letter, which her brother ſhould tranſcribe and tranſmit to his miſtreſs, as the produce of his own underſtanding; and had actually compoſed a very tender billet for this purpoſe; yet her intention was entirely fruſtrated by the miſapprehenſion of the lover himſelf, who, in conſequence of his ſiſter's repeated admonitions, anticipated her ſcheme, by writing for himſelf, and diſpatching the

the letter one afternoon, while Mrs. Grizzle was viſiting at the parſon's.

Neither was this ſtep the effect of his vanity or precipitation; but having been often aſſured by his ſiſter, that it was abſolutely neceſſary for him to make a declaration of his love in writing, he took this opportunity of acting in conformity with her advice, when his imagination was unengaged or undiſturbed by any other ſuggeſtion, without ſuſpecting in the leaſt that ſhe intended to ſave him the trouble of exerciſing his own genius. Left, therefore, as he imagined, to his own inventions, he ſat down and produced the following morceau, which was tranſmitted to miſs Appleby, before his ſiſter and counſellor had the leaſt intimation of the affair.

Miſs SALLY APPLEBY.

Madam,

UNderſtanding you have a parcel of heart, warranted ſound, to be diſpoſed of, ſhall be willing to treat for ſaid commodity, on reaſonable terms; doubt not, ſhall agree for ſame; ſhall wait of you for further information, when and where you ſhall appoint. This the needful from

Yours, &c.

GAM. PICKLE.

This laconic epiſtle, ſimple and unadorned as it was, met with as cordial a reception from the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, as if it had been couched in the moſt elegant terms that delicacy of paſſion and cultivated genius could ſupply: nay, I believe, was the more welcome, on account

account of its mercantile plainneſs; becauſe when an advantageous match is in view, a ſenſible woman often conſiders the flowery profeſſions and rapturous exclamations of love, as enſnaring ambiguities, or at beſt impertinent preliminaries, that retard the treaty they are deſigned to promote: whereas Mr. Pickle removed all diſagreeable uncertainty, by deſcending at once to the moſt intereſting particular.

She had no ſooner, as a dutiful child, communicated this billet-doux to her father, than he as a careful parent viſited Mr. Pickle, and in preſence of Mrs. Grizzle, demanded a formal explanation of his ſentiments with regard to his daughter Sally. Mr. Gamaliel, without any ceremony, aſſured him he had a reſpect for the young woman, and with his good leave, would take her for better for worſe. Mr. Appleby, after having expreſſed his ſatisfaction that he had fixed his affections in his family, comforted the lover with the aſſurance of his being agreeable to the young lady, and they forthwith proceeded to the articles of the marriage-ſettlement, which being diſcuſſed and determined, a lawyer was ordered to engroſs them; the wedding cloaths were bought, and in ſhort, a day was appointed for the celebration of their nuptials, to which every body of any faſhion in the neighbourhood was invited. Among theſe commodore Trunnion and Mr. Hatchway were not forgotten, being the ſole companions of the bridegroom, with whom, by this time, they had contracted a ſort of intimacy at their nocturnal rendezvous.

They had received a previous intimation of what was on the anvil, from the landlord, before Mr. Pickle thought proper to declare himſelf; in con-

conſequence of which, the topic of the one-eyed commander's diſcourſe at their meeting for ſeveral evenings before, had been the folly and plague of matrimony, on which he held forth with great vehemence of abuſe, levelled at the fair ſex, whom he repreſented as devils incarnate, ſent from hell to torment mankind; and in particular, inveighed againſt old maids, for whom he ſeemed to entertain a ſingular averſion; while his friend Jack confirmed the truth of all his allegations, and gratified his own malignant vein at the ſame time, by clenching every ſentence with a ſly joke upon the married ſtate, built upon ſome alluſion to a ſhip or ſea-faring life. He compared a woman to a great gun loaded with fire, brimſtone and noiſe, which being violently heated, will bounce and fly, and play the devil, if you don't take ſpecial care of her breechings. He ſaid ſhe was like a hurricane that never blows from one quarter, but veers about to all points of the compaſs: he likened her to a painted galley curiouſly rigged, with a leak in her hold, which her huſband would never be able to ſtop. He obſerved that her inclinations were like the Bay of Biſcay; for why? becauſe you may heave your deep ſea lead long enough, without ever reaching the bottom. That he who comes to anchor on a wife, may find himſelf moored in damned foul ground, and after all, can't for his blood ſlip his cable; and that for his own part, thof he might make ſhort trips for paſtime, he would never embark in woman on the voyage of life, becauſe he was afraid of foundering in the firſt foul weather.

In all probability, theſe inſinuations made ſome impreſſion on the mind of Mr. Pickle, who was not

not very much inclined to run great riſks of any kind; but the injunctions and importunities of his ſiſter, who was bent upon the match, overbalanced the opinion of his ſea friends, who finding him determined to marry, notwithſtanding all the hints of caution they had thrown out, reſolved to accept his invitation, and honoured his nuptials with their preſence accordingly.

CHAP. IV.

The behav'our of Mrs. Grizzle *at the wedding, with an account of the gueſts.*

I Hope it will not be thought uncharitable, if I advance by way of conjecture, that Mrs. Grizzle, on this grand occaſion, ſummoned her whole exertion, to play off the artillery of her charms, upon the ſingle gentlemen who were invited to the entertainment: ſure I am, ſhe diſplayed to the beſt advantage all the engaging qualities ſhe poſſeſſed: her affability at dinner was altogether uncommon, her attention to the gueſts was ſuperfluouſly hoſpitable, her tongue was ſheathed with a moſt agreeable and infantine liſp, her addreſs was perfectly obliging; and though, conſcious of the extraordinary capacity of her mouth, ſhe would not venture to hazard a laugh, ſhe modelled her lips into an enchanting ſimper, which played upon her contenance all day long; nay ſhe even profited by that defect in her viſion we have already obſerved, and ſecurely contemplated thoſe features which were moſt to her liking, while the reſt of the company believed her regards were diſpoſed in a quite contrary direction. With what humility of complaiſance did ſhe re-

ceive the compliments of thoſe who could not help praiſing the elegance of the banquet! and how piouſly did ſhe ſeize that opportunity of commemorating the honours of her ſire, by obſerving that it was no merit in her to underſtand ſomething of entertainments, as ſhe had occaſion to preſide at ſo many, during the mayoralty of her papa! Far from diſcovering the leaſt ſymptom of pride and exultation, when the opulence of her family became the ſubject of converſation, ſhe aſſumed a ſeverity of countenance; and after having moralized on the vanity of riches, declared that thoſe who looked upon her as a fortune, were very much miſtaken; for her father had left her no more than poor five thouſand pounds, which, with what little ſhe had ſaved of the intereſt ſince his death, was all ſhe had to depend upon: indeed, if ſhe had placed her chief felicity in wealth, ſhe ſhould not have been ſo forward in deſtroying her own expectations, by adviſing and promoting the event at which they were now ſo happily aſſembled; but ſhe hoped ſhe ſhould always have virtue enough to poſtpone any intereſted conſideration, when it ſhould happen to claſh with the happineſs of her friends. Finally, ſuch was her modeſty and ſelf-denial, that ſhe induſtriouſly informed thoſe whom it might concern, that ſhe was no leſs than three years older than the bride; though had ſhe added ten to the reckoning, ſhe would have committed no miſtake in point of computation.

To contribute as much as lay in her power to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, ſhe in the afternoon regaled them with a tune on the harpſichord, accompanied with her voice, which, though not the moſt melodious in the world, I dare ſay, would have

have been equally at their ſervice, could ſhe have vyed with Philomel in ſong; and as the laſt effort of her complaiſance, when dancing was propoſed, ſhe was prevailed upon, at the requeſt of her new ſiſter, to open the ball in perſon.

In a word, Mrs Grizzle was the principal figure in this feſtival, and almoſt eclipſed the bride, who, far from ſeeming to diſpute the preheminence, very wiſely allowed her to make the beſt of her talents; contenting herſelf with the lot to which fortune had already called her, and which ſhe imagined would not be the leſs deſirable, if her ſiſter in-law were detached from the family.

I believe I need ſcarce advertiſe the reader, that during this whole entertainment, the commodore and his lieutenant were quite out of their element; and this, indeed, was the caſe with the bridegroom himſelf, who being utterly unacquainted with any ſort of polite commerce, found himſelf under a very diſagreeable reſtraint during the whole ſcene.

Trunnion, who had ſcarce ever been on ſhore till he was paid off, and never once in his whole life in the company of any females above the rank of thoſe who herd upon the Point at Portſmouth, was more embarraſſed about his behaviour than if he had been ſurrounded at ſea by the whole French navy. He had never pronounced the word *Madam* ſince he was born; ſo that far from entering into converſation with the ladies, he would not even return the compliment, or give the leaſt nod of civility when they drank to his health; and I verily believe, would rather have ſuffered ſuffocation than allowed the ſimple phraſe, *your ſervant*, to proceed from his mouth. He was altogether as inflexible with reſpect to the

attitudes of his body; for either through obſtinacy or baſhfulneſs, he ſat upright without motion, inſomuch that he provoked the mirth of a certain wag, who addreſſing himſelf to the lieutenant, aſked whether that was the commodore himſelf, or the wooden lion that uſed to ſtand at his gate? An image to which, it muſt be owned, Mr. Trunnion's perſon bore no faint reſemblance.

Mr. Hatchway, who was not quite ſo unpoliſhed as the commodore, and had certain notions that ſeemed to approach the ideas of common life, made a leſs uncouth appearance; but then he was a wit, and though of a very peculiar genius, partook largely of that diſpoſition which is common to all wits, who never enjoy themſelves, except when their talents meet with thoſe marks of diſtinction and veneration, which (in their own opinion) they deſerve.

Theſe circumſtances being premiſed, it is not to be wondered at, if this triumvirate made no objections to the propoſal, when ſome of the grave perſonages of the company made a motion for adjourning into another apartment, where they might enjoy their pipes and bottles, while the young folks indulged themſelves in the continuance of their own favourite diverſion. Thus reſcued, as it were, from a ſtate of annihilation, the firſt uſe the two lads of the caſtle made of their exiſtence, was to ply the bridegroom ſo hard with bumpers, that in leſs than an hour he made divers efforts to ſing, and ſoon after was carried to bed, deprived of all manner of ſenſation, to the utter diſappointment of the bridemen and maids, who, by this accident, were prevented from throwing the ſtocking, and performing certain other ceremonies practiſed on ſuch occaſions.

occaſions. As for the bride, ſhe bore this miſfortune with great good humour, and indeed, on all occaſions, behaved like a diſcreet woman, perfectly well acquainted with the nature of her own ſituation.

CHAP. V.

Mrs. Pickle *aſſumes the reins of government in her own family; her ſiſter-in-law undertakes an enterprize of great moment; but is for ſome time diverted from her purpoſe, by a very intereſting conſideration.*

WHatever deference, not to ſay ſubmiſſion, ſhe had paid to Mrs. Grizzle before ſhe was ſo nearly allied to her family, ſhe no ſooner became Mrs. Pickle, than ſhe thought it incumbent upon her to act up to the dignity of the character; and the very day after the marriage, ventured to diſpute with her ſiſter-in-law on the ſubject of her own pedigree, which ſhe affirmed to be more honourable in all reſpects than that of her huſband; obſerving that ſeveral younger brothers of her houſe had arrived at the ſtation of lord mayor of London, which was the higheſt pitch of greatneſs that any of Mr. Pickle's predeceſſors had ever attained.

This preſumption was like a thunderbolt to Mrs. Grizzle, who began to perceive that ſhe had not ſucceeded quite ſo well as ſhe imagined, in ſelecting for her brother a gentle and obedient yoke fellow, who would always treat her with that profound reſpect which ſhe thought due to her ſuperior genius, and be entirely regulated by her advice and direction: however, ſhe ſtill con-

tinued to manage the reins of government in the houſe, reprehending the ſervants as uſual; an office ſhe performed with great capacity, and in which ſhe ſeemed to take ſingular delight, until Mrs. Pickle, on pretence of conſulting her eaſe, told her one day ſhe would take that trouble upon herſelf, and for the future aſſume the management of her own family. Nothing could be more mortifying to Mrs. Grizzle than ſuch a declaration, to which, after a conſiderable pauſe, and ſtrange diſtortion of look, ſhe replied, "I ſhall never refuſe or repine at any trouble that may conduce to my brother's advantage." "Dear madam," anſwered the ſiſter, "I am infinitely obliged to your kind concern for Mr. Pickle's intereſt, which I conſider as my own, but I cannot bear to ſee you a ſufferer by your friendſhip; and, therefore, inſiſt upon exempting you from the fatigue you have borne ſo long."

In vain did the other proteſt that ſhe took pleaſure in the taſk; Mrs. Pickle aſcribed the aſſurance to her exceſs of complaiſance, and expreſſed ſuch tenderneſs of zeal for her dear ſiſter's health and tranquillity, that the reluctant maiden found herſelf obliged to reſign her authority, without enjoying the leaſt pretext for complaining of her being depoſed.

This diſgrace was attended by a fit of peeviſh devotion that laſted three or four weeks; during which period, ſhe had the additional chagrin of ſeeing the young lady gain an abſolute aſcendency over the mind of her brother, who was perſuaded to ſet up a gay equipage, and improve his houſekeeping, by an augmentation in his expence, to the amount of a thouſand a year at leaſt: tho' his alteration in the œconomy of his houſhold, effected

effected no change in his own diſpoſition, or manner of life; for ſoon as the painful ceremony of receiving and returning viſits was performed, he had recourſe again to the company of his ſea-friends, with whom he ſpent the beſt part of his time. But, if he was ſatisfied with his condition, the caſe was otherwiſe with Mrs. Grizzle, who finding her importance in the family greatly diminiſhed, her attractions neglected by all the male-ſex in the neighbourhood, and the withering hand of time hang threatening over her head, began to feel the horror of eternal virginity, and in a ſort of deſperation, reſolved at any rate to reſcue herſelf from that reproachful and uncomfortable ſituation. Thus determined, ſhe formed a plan, the execution of which, to a ſpirit leſs enterprizing and ſufficient than her's, would have appeared altogether impracticable; this was no other than to make a conqueſt of the commodore's heart, which the reader will eaſily believe was not very ſuſceptible of tender impreſſions; but, on the contrary, fortified with inſenſibility and prejudice againſt the charms of the whole ſex, and particularly prepoſſeſſed to the prejudice of that claſs diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of olds maids, in which Mrs. Grizzle was, by this time, unhappily ranked. She nevertheleſs took the field, and having inveſted this ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs, began to break ground one day, when Trunnion dined at her brother's, by ſpringing certain enſnaring commendations on the honeſty and ſincerity of ſea-faring people, paying a particular attention to his plate, and affecting a ſimper of approbation at every thing he ſaid, which by any means ſhe could conſtrue into a joke, or with modeſty be ſuppoſed to hear:

nay, even when he left decency on the left hand, (which was often the caſe) ſhe ventured to reprimand his freedom of ſpeech with a gracious grin, ſaying, "Sure you gentlemen belonging to the ſea have ſuch an odd way with you." But all this complacency was ſo ineffectual, that, far from ſuſpecting the true cauſe of it, the commodore, that very evening, at the club, in preſence of her brother, with whom, by this time, he could take any manner of freedom, did not ſcruple to damn her for a ſquinting, block-faced, chattering piſs-kitchen; and immediately after drank deſpair to all old maids. The toaſt Mr. Pickle pledged without the leaſt heſitation, and next day intimated to his ſiſter, who bore the indignity with ſurpriſing reſignation, and did not therefore deſiſt from her ſcheme, unpromiſing as it ſeemed to be, until her attention was called off, and engaged in another care, which, for ſome time, interrupted the progreſs of this deſign. Her ſiſter had not been married many months, when ſhe exhibited evident ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the general ſatisfaction of all concerned, and the inexpreſſible joy of Mrs. Grizzle, who (as we have already hinted) was more intereſted in the preſervation of the family-name, than in any other conſideration whatever. She therefore no ſooner diſcovered appearances to juſtify and confirm her hopes, than poſtponing her own purpoſe, and laying aſide that pique and reſentment ſhe had conceived from the behaviour of Mrs. Pickle, when ſhe ſuperſeded her authority; or perhaps, conſidering her in no other light than that of the vehicle which contained, and was deſtined to convey her brother's heir to light, ſhe determined to exert her uttermoſt

moſt in nurſing, tending, and cheriſhing her, during the term of her important charge. With this view ſhe purchaſed Culpepper's Midwifery, which, with that ſagacious performance dignified with Ariſtotle's name, ſhe ſtudied with indefatigable care, and diligently peruſed the Compleat Houſewife, together with Quincy's Diſpenſatory, culling every jelly, marmalade and conſerve which theſe authors recommend as either ſalutary or toothſome, for the benefit and comfort of her ſiſter-in law, during her geſtation. She reſtricted her from eating roots, pot herbs, fruit, and all ſorts of vegetables; and one day when Mrs. Pickle had plucked a peach with her own hand, and was in the very act of putting it between her teeth, Mrs. Grizzle perceived the raſh attempt, and running up to her, fell upon her knees in the garden, intreating her, with tears in her eyes, to reſiſt ſuch a pernicious appetite. Her requeſt was no ſooner complied with, than recollecting that if her ſiſter's longing was baulked, the child might be affected with ſome diſagreeable mark, or deplorable diſeaſe, ſhe begged as earneſtly that ſhe would ſwallow the fruit, and in the mean time ran for ſome cordial water of her own compoſing, which ſhe forced upon her ſiſter, as an antidote to the poiſon ſhe had received.

This exceſſive zeal and tenderneſs did not fail to be very troubleſome to Mrs. Pickle, who having revolved divers plans for the recovery of her own eaſe, at length determined to engage Mrs. Grizzle in ſuch employment as would interrupt that cloſe attendance which ſhe found ſo teazing and diſagreeable. Neither did ſhe wait long for an opportunity of putting her reſolution in practice. The very next day, a gentleman

happening to dine with Mr. Pickle, unfortunately mentioned a pine-apple, part of which he had eaten a week before at the houſe of a nobleman who lived in another part of the country, at the diſtance of an hundred miles at leaſt.

The name of this fatal fruit was no ſooner pronounced, than Mrs. Grizzle, who inceſſantly watched her ſiſter's looks, took the alarm, becauſe ſhe thought they gave certain indications of curioſity and deſire; and after having obſerved that ſhe herſelf never could eat pine-apples, which were altogether unnatural productions, extorted by the force of artificial fire, out of filthy manure, aſked with a faultering voice, if Mrs. Pickle was not of her way of thinking? This young lady, who wanted neither ſlyneſs nor penetration, at once divined her meaning, and replied with ſeeming unconcern, that for her own part ſhe ſhould never repine, if there was not a pine apple in the univerſe, provided ſhe could indulge herſelf with the fruits of her own country.

This anſwer was calculated for the benefit of the ſtranger, who would certainly have ſuffered for his imprudence by the reſentment of Mrs. Grizzle, had her ſiſter expreſſed the leaſt reliſh for the fruit in queſtion. It had the deſired effect, and re-eſtabliſhed the peace of the company, which was not a little endangered by the gentleman's want of conſideration. Next morning, however, after breakfaſt, the pregnant lady, in purſuance of her plan, yawned (as it were by accident) full in the face of her maiden ſiſter, who being infinitely diſturbed by this convulſion, affirmed it was a ſymptom of longing; and inſiſted upon knowing the object in de-

deſire, when Mrs. Pickle affecting an affected ſmile, told her ſhe had eaten a moſt delicious pine-apple in her ſleep. This declaration was attended with an immediate ſcream uttered by Mrs. Grizzle, who inſtantly perceiving her ſiſter ſurprized at the exclamation, claſped her in her arms, and aſſured her, with a ſort of hyſterical laugh, that ſhe could not help ſcreaming with joy, becauſe ſhe had it in her power to gratify her dear ſiſter's wiſh; a lady in the neighbourhood having promiſed to ſend her, in a preſent, a couple of delicate pine-apples, which ſhe would that very day go in queſt of.

Mrs. Pickle would by no means conſent to this propoſal, on pretence of ſparing the other unneceſſary fatigue; and aſſured her, that if ſhe had any deſire to eat a pine-apple, it was ſo faint, that the diſappointment could produce no bad conſequence. But this aſſurance was conveyed in a manner (which ſhe knew very well how to adopt) that inſtead of diſſuading, rather ſtimulated Mrs. Grizzle to ſet out immediately, not on a viſit to that lady, whoſe promiſe ſhe herſelf had feigned with a view of conſulting her ſiſter's tranquillity, but on a random ſearch thro' the whole county for this unlucky fruit, which was like to produce ſo much vexation and prejudice to her and her father's houſe.

During three whole days and nights, did ſhe, attended by a vallet, ride from place to place without ſucceſs, unmindful of her health, and careleſs of her reputation, that began to ſuffer from the nature of her inquiry, which was purſued with ſuch peculiar eagerneſs and diſtraction, that every body with whom ſhe converſed, looked

upon her as an unhappy perſon, whoſe intellects were not a little diſordered.

Baffled in all her reſearches within the county, ſhe at length reſolved to viſit that very nobleman, at whoſe houſe the officious ſtranger had been (for her) ſo unfortunately regaled, and actually arrived in a poſt chaiſe at the place of his habitation, where ſhe introduced her buſineſs as an affair on which the happineſs of a whole family depended. By virtue of a preſent to his lordſhip's gardener ſhe procured the Heſperian fruit, with which ſhe returned in triumph.

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Grizzle *is indefatigable in gratifying her ſiſter's longings.* Peregrine *is born, and managed contrary to the directions and remonſtrances of his aunt, who is diſguſted upon that account; and reſumes the plan which ſhe had before rejected.*

THE ſucceſs of this device would have encouraged Mrs. Pickle to practiſe more of the ſame ſort upon her ſiſter-in-law, had ſhe not been deterred by a violent fever which ſeized her zealous ally, in conſequence of the fatigue and uneaſineſs ſhe had undergone; which, while it laſted, as effectually conduced to her repoſe, as any other ſtratagem ſhe could invent. But Mrs. Grizzle's health was no ſooner reſtored, than the other, being as much incommoded as ever, was obliged, in her own defence, to have recourſe to ſome other contrivance; and managed her artifices

ces in ſuch a manner, as leaves it at this day a doubt whether ſhe was really ſo whimſical and capricious in her appetites as ſhe herſelf pretended to be; for her longings were not reſtricted to the demands of the palate and ſtomach, but alſo affected all the other organs of ſenſe, and even invaded her imagination, which at this period ſeemed to be ſtrangely diſeaſed.

One time ſhe longed to pinch her huſband's ear; and it was with infinite difficulty that his ſiſter could prevail upon him to undergo the operation. Yet this taſk was eaſy, in compariſon with another ſhe undertook for the gratification of Mrs. Pickle's unaccountable deſire; which was no other than to perſuade the commodore to ſubmit his chin to the mercy of the big-bellied lady, who ardently wiſhed for an opportunity of plucking three black hairs from his beard. When this propoſal was firſt communicated to Mr. Trunnion by the huſband, his anſwer was nothing but a dreadful effuſion of oaths, accompanied with ſuch a ſtare, and delivered in ſuch a tone of voice, as terrified the poor beſeecher into immediate ſilence; ſo that Mrs. Grizzle was fain to take the whole enterprize upon herſelf, and next day went to the gariſon accordingly, where having obtained entrance by means of the lieutenant, who, while his commander was aſleep, ordered her to be admitted for the joke's ſake, ſhe waited patiently till he turned out, and then accoſted him in the yard, where he uſed to perform his morning walk. He was thunder-ſtruck at the appearance of a woman in a place which he had hitherto kept ſacred from the whole ſex, and immediately began to utter an apoſtrophe to Tom Pipes, whoſe turn it was then to watch; when Mrs. Grizzle falling

falling on her knees before him, conjured him with many pathetic ſupplications, to hear and grant her requeſt, which was no ſooner ſignified, than he bellowed in ſuch an outragious manner that the whole court re-echoed the opprobious term *bitch*; and the word *damnation*, which he repeated with ſurprizing volubility, without any ſort of propriety or connection; and retreated into his penetralia, leaving the baffled devotee in the humble poſture ſhe had ſo unſucceſsfully choſen to melt his obdurate heart.

Mortifying as this repulſe muſt have been to a lady of her ſtately diſpoſition, ſhe did not relinquiſh her aim, but endeavoured to intereſt the commodore's counſellors and adherents in her cauſe. With this view ſhe ſolicited the intereſt of Mr. Hatchway, who, being highly pleaſed with a circumſtance ſo productive of mirth and diverſion, readily intered into her meaſures, and promiſed to employ his whole influence for her ſatisfaction: and as for the boatſwain's mate he was rendered propitious by the preſent of a guinea which ſhe ſlipt into his hand. In ſhort, Mrs. Grizzle was continually engaged in this negociation for the ſpace of ten days, during which the commodore was ſo inceſſantly peſtered with her remonſtrances, and the admonitions of his aſſociates, that he ſwore his people had a deſign upon his life, which becoming a burthen to him, he at laſt complied, and was conducted to the ſcene like a victim to the altar, or rather like a reluctant bear, when he is led to the ſtake amidſt the ſhouts and cries of butchers and their dogs. After all, this victory was not quite ſo deciſive as the conquerors imagined; for the patient being

ing ſet, and the performer prepared with a pair of pincers, a ſmall difficulty occurred: ſhe could not for ſome time diſcern one black hair on the whole ſuperficies of Mr. Trunnion's face; when Mrs. Grizzle, very much alarmed and diſconcerted, had recourſe to a magnifying glaſs that ſtood upon her toilette; and after a moſt accurate examination, diſcovered a fibre of a duſky hue, to which the inſtrument being applied, Mrs. Pickle pulled it up by the roots, to the no ſmall diſcompoſure of the owner, who feeling the ſmart much more ſevere than he had expected, ſtarted up, and ſwore he would not part with another hair to ſave them all from damnation.

Mr. Hatchway exhorted him to patience and reſignation, Mrs. Grizzle repeated her intreaties with great humility; but finding him deaf to all her prayers, and abſolutely bent upon leaving the houſe, ſhe claſped his knees, and begged for the love of God that he would have compaſſion upon a diſtreſſed family, and endure a little more for the ſake of the poor infant, who would otherwiſe be born with a grey beard upon its chin. Far from being melted, he was rather exaſperated by this reflection; to which he replied with great indignation, "Damn ye for a yaw-ſighted-bitch! he'll be hanged long enough before he has any beard at all:" ſo ſaying, he diſengaged himſelf from her embraces, flung out at the door, and halted homewards with ſuch ſurpriſing ſpeed, that the lieutenant could not overtake him until he had arrived at his own gate; and Mrs. Grizzle was ſo much affected with his eſcape, that her ſiſter, in pure compaſſion, deſired ſhe would not afflict herſelf, proteſting that her own wiſh

was already gratified, for ſhe had plucked three hairs at once, having from the beginning been dubious of the commodore's patience. But the labours of this aſſiduous kinſwoman did not end with the atchievement of this adventure; her eloquence or induſtry was employed without ceaſing, in the performance of other taſks impoſed by the ingenious craft of her ſiſter-in-law, who at another time conceived an inſuppreſſible affection for a fricaſſee of frogs, which ſhould be the genuine natives of France; ſo that there was a neceſſity for diſpatching a meſſenger on purpoſe to that kingdom: but as ſhe could not depend upon the integrity of any common ſervant, Mrs. Grizzle undertook that province, and actually ſet ſail in a cutter for Bologne, from whence ſhe returned in eight and forty hours with a tub full of thoſe live animals, which being dreſſed according to art, her ſiſter would not taſte them, on pretence that her fit of longing was paſt: but then her inclinations took a different turn, and fixed themſelves upon a curious implement belonging to a lady of quality in the neighbourhood, which was reported to be a very great curioſity; this was no other than a porcelain chamber-pot of admirable workmanſhip, contrived by the honourable owner, who kept it for her own private uſe, and cheriſhed it as an utenſil of ineſtimable value.

Mrs. Grizzle ſhuddered at the firſt hint ſhe received of her ſiſter's deſire to poſſeſs this piece of furniture; becauſe ſhe knew it was not to be purchaſed; and the lady's character, which was none of the moſt amiable in point of humanity and condeſcenſion, forbad all hopes of borrowing it for a ſeaſon; ſhe therefore attempted

ed to reaſon down this capricious appetite, as an extravagance of imagination which ought to be combated and repreſſed; and Mrs. Pickle, to all appearance, was convinced and ſatisfied by her arguments and advice: but, nevertheleſs, could make uſe of no other convenience, and was threatened with a very dangerous ſuppreſſion. Rouzed at the peril in which ſhe ſuppoſed her to be, Mrs. Grizzle flew to the lady's houſe, and having obtained a private audience, diſcloſed the melancholy ſituation of her ſiſter, and implored the benevolence of her ladyſhip, who, contrary to expectation, received her very graciouſly, and conſented to indulge Mrs. Pickle's longing. Mr. Pickle began to be out of humour at the expence to which he was expoſed by the caprice of his wife, who was herſelf alarmed at this laſt accident, and for the future kept her fancy within bounds; inſomuch, that without being ſubject to any more extraordinary trouble, Mrs. Grizzle reaped the long wiſhed fruits of her deareſt expectation in the birth of a fine boy, whom her ſiſter in a few months brought into the world.

I ſhall omit the deſcription of the rejoicings, which were infinite on this important occaſion, and only obſerve that Mrs. Pickle's mother and aunt ſtood godmothers, and the commodore aſſiſted at the ceremony as godfather to the child, who was chriſtened by the name of Peregrine, in compliment to the memory of a deceaſed uncle. While the mother was confined to her bed, and incapable of maintaining her own authority, Mrs. Grizzle took charge of the infant by a double claim; and ſuperintended with ſurprizing vigilance the nurſe and midwife in all the particulars.

lars of their reſpective offices, which were performed by her expreſs direction. But no ſooner was Mrs. Pickle in a condition to re-aſſume the management of her own affairs, than ſhe thought proper to alter certain regulations concerning the child, which had obtained in conſequence of her ſiſter's orders, directing, among other innovations, that the bandages with which the infant had been ſo neatly rolled up, like an Ægyptian mummy, ſhould be looſened and laid aſide, in order to rid nature of all reſtraint, and give the blood free ſcope to circulate; and with her own hands ſhe plunged him headlong every morning in a tub-full of cold water. This operation ſeemed ſo barbarous to the tender hearted Mrs. Grizzle, that ſhe not only oppoſed it with all her eloquence, ſhedding abundance of tears over the ſacrifice when it was made; but took horſe immediately, and departed for the habitation of an eminent country phyſician, whom ſhe conſulted in theſe words. "Pray, doctor, is it not both dangerous and cruel to be the means of letting a poor tender infant periſh, by ſouſing it in water as cold as ice?" "Yes, replied the doctor, downright murder, I affirm." "I ſee you are a perſon of great learning and ſagacity, ſaid the other; and I muſt beg you will be ſo good as to ſignify your opinion in your own hand writing." The doctor immediately complied with her requeſt, and expreſſed himſelf upon a ſlip of paper to this purpoſe.

Theſe are to certify whom it may concern, that I firmly believe, and it is my unalterable opinion, that whoſoever letteth an infant periſh, by ſouſing it in cold water, even though the ſaid water ſhould not be ſo cold as ice, is in effect guilty of the murder of the ſaid infant, as witneſs my hand.

Comfit Colocynth.

Having obtained this certificate, for which the phyſician was handſomely acknowledged, ſhe returned exulting, and hoping, with ſuch authority, to overthrow all oppoſition. Accordingly next morning, when her nephew was about to undergo his diurnal baptiſm, ſhe produced the commiſſion, whereby ſhe conceived herſelf impowered to over-rule ſuch inhuman proceedings. But ſhe was diſappointed in her expectation, confident as it was; not that Mrs. Pickle pretended to differ in opinion from Dr. Colocynth, "for whoſe character and ſentiments (ſaid ſhe) I have ſuch veneration, that I ſhall carefully obſerve the caution implied in this very certificate, by which, far from condemning my method of practice, he only aſſerts that killing is murder; an aſſeveration, the truth of which, it is to be hoped, I ſhall never diſpute."

Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſooth to ſay, had rather too ſuperficially conſidered the clauſe by which ſhe thought herſelf authorized, peruſed the paper with more accuracy, and was confounded at her own want of penetration. Yet tho' ſhe was confuted, ſhe was by no means convinced that her objections to the cold bath were unreaſonable; on the contrary, after having beſtowed ſundry opprobrious epithets on the phyſician, for his want of knowledge and candour, ſhe proteſted in the moſt earneſt and ſolemn manner againſt the pernicious practice of dipping the child; a piece of cruelty which, with God's aſſiſtance, ſhe ſhould never ſuffer to be inflicted on her own iſſue; and waſhing her hands of the melancholy conſequence that would certainly enſue, ſhut herſelf up in her cloſet, to indulge her ſorrow and vexation. She was deceived, however, in

in her prognoſtic; the boy, inſtead of declining in point of health, ſeemed to acquire freſh vigour from every plunge, as if he had been reſolved to diſcredit the wiſdom and foreſight of his aunt, who, in all probability, could never forgive him for this want of reverence and reſpect. This conjecture is founded upon her behaviour to him in the ſequel of his infancy, during which ſhe was known to torture him more than once, when ſhe had opportunities of thruſting pins into his fleſh, without any danger of being detected. In a word, her affections were in a little time altogether alienated from this hope of her family, whom ſhe abandoned to the conduct of his mother, whoſe province it undoubtedly was to manage the nurture of her own child; while ſhe herſelf reſumed her operations upon the commodore, whom ſhe was reſolved at any rate to captivate and inſlave. And it muſt be owned, that Mrs. Grizzle's knowledge of the human heart never ſhone ſo conſpicuous as in the methods ſhe purſued for the accompliſhment of this important aim.

Through the rough unpoliſhed huſk that caſed the ſoul of Trunnion, ſhe could eaſily diſtinguiſh a large ſhare of that vanity and ſelf-conceit that generally predominate even in the moſt ſavage breaſt; and to this ſhe conſtantly appealed. In his preſence ſhe always exclaimed againſt the craft and diſhoneſt diſſimulation of the world; and never failed of uttering particular invectives againſt thoſe arts of chicanery, in which the lawyers are ſo converſant to the prejudice and ruin of their fellow creatures: obſerving that in a ſeafaring life, ſo far as ſhe had opportunities of judging or being informed, there was nothing but friend-

friendſhip, ſincerity, and a hearty contempt for every thing that was mean or ſelfiſh.

This kind of converſation, with the aſſiſtance of certain particular civilities, inſenſibly made an impreſſion on the mind of the commodore; and that the more effectual, as his former prepoſſeſſions were built upon very ſlender foundations; his antipathy to old maids, which he had conceived upon hearſay, began gradually to diminiſh, when he found they were not quite ſuch infernal animals as they had been repreſented; and it was not long before he was heard to obſerve at the club, that Pickle's ſiſter had not ſo much of the core of bitch in her as he had imagined. This negative compliment, by the medium of her brother, ſoon reached the ears of Mrs. Grizzle, who, thus encouraged, redoubled all her arts and attention; ſo that in leſs than three months after, he in the ſame place diſtinguiſhed her with the epithet of a damned ſenſible jade.

Hatchway taking the alarm at this declaration, which he feared foreboded ſomething fatal to his intereſt, told his commander with a ſneer, that ſhe had ſenſe enough to bring him to, under her ſtern; and he did not doubt but that ſuch an old crazy veſſel would be the better for being taken in tow. "But howſomever, added this arch adviſer, I'd have you take care of your upper works; for if once you are made faſt to her poop, agad! ſhe'll ſpank it away, and make every beam in your body crack with ſtraining." Our ſhe-projector's whole plan had like to have been ruined by the effect which this malicious hint had upon Trunnion, whoſe rage and ſuſpicion being wakened at once, his colour changed from tawny to a cadaverous pale, and then ſhifting to a deep and

duſky

duſky red, ſuch as we ſometimes obſerve in the ſky when it is replete with thunder, he, after his uſual preamble of unmeaning oaths, anſwered in theſe words: "Damn ye, you jury-legg'd dog, you would give all the ſtowage in your hold to be as ſound as I am; and as for being taken in tow, d'ye ſee, I'm not ſo diſabled but that I can lie my courſe, and perform my voyage without any aſſiſtance; and, agad! no man ſhall ever ſee Hawſer Trunnion lagging a-ſtern in the wake of e'er a bitch in chriſtendom."

Mrs. Grizzle, who every morning interrogated her brother with regard to the ſubject of his night's converſation with his friends, ſoon received the unwelcome news of the commodore's averſion to matrimony; and juſtly imputing the greateſt part of his diſguſt to the ſatirical inſinuations of Mr. Hatchway, reſolved to level this obſtruction to her ſucceſs, and actually found means to intereſt him in her ſcheme. She had indeed, on ſome occaſions, a particular knack at making converts, being probably not unacquainted with that grand ſyſtem of perſuaſion, which is adopted by the greateſt perſonages of the age, as fraught with maxims much more effectual than all the eloquence of Tully or Demoſthenes, even when ſupported by the demonſtrations of truth: beſides, Mr. Hatchway's fidelity to his new ally, was confirmed by his foreſeeing in his captain's marriage an infinite fund of gratification for his own cynical diſpoſition. Thus therefore, converted and properly cautioned, he for the future ſuppreſſed all the virulence of his wit againſt the matrimonial ſtate; and as he knew not how to open his mouth in the poſitive praiſe of any perſon whatever, took all opportunities of excepting

Mrs.

Mrs. Grizzle by name, from the cenſures he liberally beſtowed upon the reſt of her ſex. "She is not a drunkard, like Nan Caſtick of Deptford, he would ſay; not a nincompoop, like Peg Simper of Woolwich; not a brimſtone, like Kate Coddle of Chatham; nor a ſhrew, like Nell Griffin on the Point Portſmouth; (ladies to whom, at different times, they had both paid their addreſſes) but a tight, good humoured, ſenſible wench, who, knows very well how to box her compaſs; well trimmed aloft, and well ſheathed alow, with a good cargo under her hatches." The commodore at firſt imagined this commendation was ironical, but hearing it repeated again and again, was filled with aſtoniſhment at this ſurpriſing change in the lieutenant's behaviour; and after a long fit of muſing, concluded that Hatchway himſelf harboured a matrimonial deſign on the perſon of Mrs. Grizzle.

Pleaſed with this conjecture, he rallied Jack in his turn, and one night toaſted her health as a compliment to his paſſion; a circumſtance which the lady learned next day by the uſual canal of her intelligence, and interpreting as the reſult of his own tenderneſs for her, ſhe congratulated herſelf upon the victory ſhe had obtained; and thinking it unneceſſary to continue the reſerve ſhe had hitherto induſtriouſly affected, reſolved from that day to ſweeten her behaviour towards him with ſuch a diſh of affection, as could not fail to perſuade him that he had inſpired her with a reciprocal flame. In conſequence of this determination, he was invited to dinner, and while he ſtaid, treated with ſuch cloying proofs of her regard, that not only the reſt of the company, but even Trunnion himſelf,

per-

perceived her drift: and taking the alarm accordingly, could not help exclaiming, "Oho! I ſee how the land lies, and if I don't weather the point, I'll be damn'd." Having thus expreſſed himſelf to his afflicted inamorata, he made the beſt of his way to the gariſon, in which he ſhut himſelf up for the ſpace of ten days, and had no communication with his friends and domeſticks but by looks, which were moſt ſignificantly pictureſque.

CHAP. VII.

Divers ſtratagems are invented and put in practice, in order to overcome the obſtinacy of Trunnion, *who at length is teazed and tortured into the nooſe of wedlock.*

THIS abrupt departure and unkind declaration affected Mrs. Grizzle ſo much, that ſhe fell ſick of ſorrow and mortification: and after having confined herſelf to her bed for three days, ſent for her brother, told him ſhe perceived her end drawing near, and deſired that a lawyer might be brought, in order to write her laſt will. Mr. Pickle, ſurpriſed at her demand, began to act the part of a comforter, aſſuring her that her diſtemper was not at all dangerous; and that he would inſtantly ſend for a phyſician, who would convince her that ſhe was in no manner of jeopardy; ſo that there was no occaſion at preſent to employ any officious attorney in ſuch a melancholy taſk. Indeed, this affectionate brother was of opinion that a will was altogether ſuperfluous at any rate, as he

he himſelf was heir at law to his ſiſter's whole real and perſonal eſtate. But ſhe inſiſted upon his compliance with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he could no longer reſiſt her importunities; and a ſcrivener arriving, ſhe dictated and executed her will, in which ſhe bequeathed to commodore Trunnion one thouſand pounds, to purchaſe a mourning ring, which ſhe hoped he would wear as a pledge of her friendſhip and affection. Her brother, though he did not much reliſh this teſtimony of her love, nevertheleſs that ſame evening gave an account of this particular to Mr. Hatchway, who was alſo, as Mr. Pickle aſſured him, generouſly remembered by the teſtatrix.

The lieutenant, fraught with this piece of intelligence, watched for an opportunity, and as ſoon as he perceived the commodore's features a little unbended from that ferocious contraction they had retained ſo long, ventured to inform him that Pickle's ſiſter lay at the point of death, and that ſhe had left him a thouſand pounds in her will. This piece of news overwhelmed him with confuſion, and Mr. Hatchway imputing his ſilence to remorſe, reſolved to take advantage of that favourable moment, and counſelled him to go and viſit the poor young woman, who was dying for love of him. But his admonition happened to be ſomewhat unſeaſonable; for Trunnion no ſooner heard him mention the cauſe of her diſorder than his moroſity recurring, he burſt out into a violent fit of curſing, and forthwith betook himſelf again to his hammock, where he lay uttering in a low growling tone of voice, a repetition of oaths and imprecations, for the ſpace of four and twenty hours, without ceaſing. This was a delicious

meal to the lieutenant, who, eager to inhance the pleaſure of the entertainment, and at the ſame time conduce to the ſucceſs of the cauſe he had eſpouſed, invented a ſtratagem, the execution of which had all the effect he could deſire. He prevailed upon Pipes, who was devoted to his ſervice, to get upon the top of the chimney belonging to the commodore's chamber, at midnight, and to lower down by a rope a bunch of ſlinking whitings, which being performed, he put a ſpeaking trumpet to his mouth, and hollowed down the vent, in a voice like thunder, "Trunnion! Trunnion! turn out and be ſpliced, or lie ſtill and be damned." This dreadful note, the terror of which was increaſed by the ſilence and darkneſs of the night, as well as the echo of the paſſage through which it was conveyed, no ſooner reached the ears of the aſtoniſhed commodore, than turning his eye towards the place from whence this ſolemn addreſs ſeemed to proceed, he beheld a glittering object that vaniſhed in an inſtant. Juſt as his ſuperſtitious fear had improved the apparition into ſome ſupernatural meſſenger cloathed in ſhining array, his opinion was confirmed by a ſudden exploſion, which he took for thunder, though it was no other than the noiſe of a piſtol fired down the chimney by the boatſwain's mate, according to the inſtructions he had received; and he had time enough to deſcend before he was in any danger of being detected by his commander, who could not for a whole hour recollect himſelf from the amazement and conſternation which had overpowered his faculties.

At length, however, he got up and rung his bell with great agitation. He repeated the ſummons

mons more than once, but no regard being paid to this alarm, his dread returned with double terror, a cold ſweat bedewed his limbs, his knees knocked together, his hair briſtled up, and the remains of his teeth were ſhattered to pieces in the convulſive vibrations of his jaws.

In the midſt of this agony he made one deſperate effort, and burſting open the door of his apartment, bolted into Hatchway's chamber, which happened to be on the ſame floor. There he found the lieutenant in a counterfeit ſwoon, who pretended to wake from his trance in an ejaculation of "Lord have mercy upon us!" And being queſtioned by the terrified commodore with regard to what had happened, aſſured him he had heard the ſame voice and clap of thunder by which Trunnion himſelf had been diſcompoſed

Pipes, whoſe turn it was to watch, concurred in giving evidence to the ſame purpoſe; and the commodore not only owned that he had heard the voice, but likewiſe communicated his viſion, with all the aggravation which his diſturbed fancy ſuggeſted.

A conſultation immediately enſued, in which Mr. Hatchway very gravely obſerved, that the finger of God was plainly perceivable in thoſe ſignals; and that it would be both ſinful and fooliſh to diſregard his commands, eſpecially as the match propoſed was, in all reſpects, more advantageous than any that one of his years and infirmities could reaſonably expect; declaring that for his own part he would not endanger his ſoul and body by living one day longer under the ſame roof with a man who deſpiſed the holy

will of heaven; and Tom Pipes adhered to the ſame pious reſolution.

Trunnion's perſeverance could not reſiſt the number and diverſity of conſiderations that aſſaulted it; he revolved in ſilence all the oppoſite motives that occurred to his reflection; and after having been, to all appearance, bewildered in the labyrinth of his own thoughts, he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and heaving a piteous groan, yielded to their remonſtrances in theſe words: "Well, ſince it muſt be ſo, I think we muſt e'en grapple. But damn my eyes! 'tis a damn'd hard caſe that a fellow of my years ſhould be compell'd, d'ye ſee, to beat up to windward all the reſt of my life, againſt the current of his own inclination."

This important article being diſcuſſed, Mr. Hatchway ſet out in the morning to viſit the deſpairing ſhepherdeſs, and was handſomely rewarded for the enlivening tidings with which he bleſſed her ears. Sick as ſhe was, ſhe could not help laughing heartily at the contrivance, in conſequence of which her ſwain's aſſent had been obtained, and gave the lieutenant ten guineas for Tom Pipes, in conſideration of the part he acted in the farce.

In the afternoon the commodore ſuffered himſelf to be conveyed to her apartment, like a felon to execution, and was received by her in a languiſhing manner and genteel diſhabille, accompanied by her ſiſter in-law; who was for very obvious reaſons, extremely ſolicitous about her ſucceſs. Though the lieutenant had tutored him touching his behaviour at this interview, he made a thouſand wry faces before he could pronounce the ſimple ſalutation of *How d'ye?* to his

his miſtreſs; and after his counſellor had urged him with twenty or thirty whiſpers, to each of which he had replied aloud, "Damn your eyes, I won't," he got up, and halting towards the couch on which Mrs. Grizzle reclined in a ſtate of ſtrange expectation, he ſeized her hand and preſſed it to his lips; but this piece of gallantry he performed in ſuch a reluctant, uncouth, indignant manner, that the nymph had need of all her reſolution to endure the compliment without ſhrinking; and he himſelf was ſo diſconcerted at what he had done, that he inſtantly retired to the other end of the room, where he ſat ſilent, and broiled with ſhame and vexation. Mrs. Pickle, like a ſenſible matron, quitted the place, on pretence of going to the nurſery; and Mr. Hatchway taking the hint, recollected that he had left his tobacco pouch in the parlour, whither he immediately deſcended, leaving the two lovers to their mutual endearments. Never had the commodore found himſelf in ſuch a diſagreeable dilemma before. He ſat in an agony of ſuſpence, as if he every moment dreaded the diſſolution of nature; and the imploring ſighs of his future bride added, if poſſible, to the pangs of his diſtreſs. Impatient of his ſituation, he rolled his eye around in queſt of ſome relief, and unable to contain himſelf, exclaimed "Damnation ſeize the fellow and his pouch too! I believe he has ſheered off and left me here in the ſtays." Mrs. Grizzle, who could not help taking ſome notice of this manifeſtation of chagrin, lamented her unhappy fate in being ſo diſagreeable to him that he could not put up with her company for a few moments without repining; and began in very tender terms to

reproach him with his inhumanity and indifference. To this expoſtulation he replied, "Zounds! what would the woman have? let the parſon do his office when he wool, here I am ready to be reeved in the matrimonial block, d'ye ſee, and damn all nonſenſical palaver." So ſaying, he retreated, leaving his miſtreſs not at all diſobliged at his plain-dealing. That ſame evening the treaty of marriage was brought upon the carpet, and by means of Mr. Pickle and the lieutenant ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, without the intervention of lawyers, whom Mr. Trunnion expreſsly excluded from all ſhare in the buſineſs; making that condition the indiſpenſible preliminary of the whole agreement. Things being brought to this bearing, Mrs. Grizzle's heart dilated with joy; her health, which, by the bye, was never dangerouſly impaired, ſhe recovered as if by inchantment, and a day being fixed for the nuptials, employed the ſhort period of her celibacy in chooſing ornaments for the celebration of her entrance into the married ſtate.

CHAP. VIII.

Preparations are made for the commodore's wedding, which is delayed by an accident that hurried him the Lord knows whither.

THE fame of this extraordinary conjunction ſpread all over the county; and on the day appointed for their ſpouſals, the church was ſurrounded by an inconceivable multitude. The commodore, to give a ſpecimen of his gallantry, by

by the advice of his friend Hatchway, reſolved to appear on horſeback on the grand occaſion, at the head of all his male attendants, whom he had rigged with the white ſhirts and black caps formerly belonging to his barge's crew; and he bought a couple of hunters for the accommodation of himſelf and his lieutenant. With this equipage then he ſet out from the gariſon for the church, after having diſpatched a meſſenger to apprize the bride that he and his company were mounted. She got immediately into the coach, accompanied by her brother and his wife, and drove directly to the place of aſſignation, where ſeveral pews were demoliſhed, and divers perſons almoſt preſſed to death, by the eagerneſs of the crowd that broke in to ſee the ceremony performed. Thus arrived at the altar, and the prieſt in attendance, they waited a whole half hour for the commodore, at whoſe ſlowneſs they began to be under ſome apprehenſion, and accordingly diſmiſſed a ſervant to quicken his pace. The valet having rode ſomething more than a mile, eſpied the whole troop diſpoſed in a long field, croſſing the road obliquely, and headed by the bridegroom and his friend Hatchway, who finding himſelf hindered by a hedge from proceeding farther in the ſame direction, fired a piſtol, and ſtood over to the other ſide, making an obtuſe angle with the line of his former courſe; and the reſt of the ſquadron followed his example, keeping always in the rear of each other, like a flight of wild geeſe.

Surprized at this ſtrange method of journeying, the meſſenger came up, and told the commodore that his lady and her company expected him in the church, where they had tarried a

conſiderable time, and were beginning to be very uneaſy at his delay; and therefore deſired he would proceed with more expedition. To this meſſage Mr. Trunnion replied, "Hark ye, brother, don't you ſee we make all poſſible ſpeed? go back and tell thoſe who ſent you, that the wind has ſhifted ſince we weighed anchor, and that we are obliged to make very ſhort trips in tacking, by reaſon of the narrowneſs of the channel; and that as we lie within ſix points of the wind, they muſt make ſome allowance for variation and leeway." "Lord, Sir! ſaid the valet, what occaſion have you to go zig zag in that manner? Do but clap ſpurs to your horſes, and ride ſtraight forward, and I'll engage you ſhall be at the church porch in leſs than a quarter of an hour." "What! right in the wind's eye? anſwered the commander; ahey! brother, where did you learn your navigation? Hawſer Trunnion is not to be taught at this time of day how to lie his courſe, or keep his own reckoning. And as for you, brother, you know beſt the trim of your own frigate." The courier finding he had to do with people who would not be eaſily perſuaded out of their own opinions, returned to the temple, and made a report of what he had ſeen and heard, to the no ſmall conſolation of the bride, who had begun to diſcover ſome ſigns of diſquiet. Compoſed, however, by this piece of intelligence, ſhe exerted her patience for the ſpace of another half hour, during which period ſeeing no bridegroom arrive, ſhe was exceedingly alarmed; ſo that all the ſpectators could eaſily perceive her perturbation, which manifeſted itſelf in frequent palpitations, heart-heavings, and alter-

alterations of countenance, in ſpite of the aſſiſtance of a ſmelling-bottle which ſhe inceſſantly applied to her noſtrils.

Various were the conjectures of the company on this occaſion: ſome imagined he had miſtaken the place of rendezvous, as he had never been at church ſince he firſt ſettled in that pariſh; others believed he had met with ſome accident, in conſequence of which his attendants had carried him back to his own houſe; and a third ſet, in which the bride herſelf was thought to be comprehended, could not help ſuſpecting that the commodore had changed his mind. But all theſe ſuppoſitions, ingenious as they were, happened to be wide of the true cauſe that detained him, which was no other than this: the commodore and his crew had by dint of turning, almoſt weathered the parſon's houſe that ſtood to windward of the church, when the notes of a pack of hounds unluckily reached the ears of the two hunters which Trunnion and the lieutenant beſtrode. Theſe fleet animals no ſooner heard the enlivening ſound, than eager for the chace they ſprung away all of a ſudden, and ſtrained every nerve to partake of the ſport, flew acroſs the fields with incredible ſpeed, overleaped hedges and ditches, and every thing in their way, without the leaſt regard to their unfortunate riders. The lieutenant, whoſe ſteed had got the heels of the other, finding it would be great folly and preſumption in him to pretend to keep the ſaddle with his wooden leg, very wiſely took the opportunity of throwing himſelf off in his paſſage through a field of rich clover, among which he lay at his eaſe; and ſeeing his captain advancing at full gallop, hailed

him with the ſalutation of "What chear? ho!" The commodore, who was in infinite diſtreſs, eying him aſkance, as he paſſed, replied with a faultering voice, "O damn you! you are ſafe at an anchor; I wiſh to God I were as faſt moored." Nevertheleſs, conſcious of his diſabled heel, he would not venture to try the experiment which had ſucceeded ſo well with Hatchway, but reſolved to ſtick as cloſe as poſſible to his horſe's back, until providence ſhould interpoſe in his behalf. With this view he dropped his whip, and with his right hand laid faſt hold on the pummel, contracting every muſcle in his body to ſecure himſelf in the ſeat, and grinning moſt formidably, in conſequence of this exertion. In this attitude he was hurried on a conſiderable way, when all of a ſudden his view was comforted by a five bar gate that appeared before him, as he never doubted that there the career of his hunter muſt neceſſarily end. But alas! he reckoned without his hoſt; far from halting at this obſtruction, the horſe ſprung over it with amazing agility, to the utter confuſion and diſorder of his owner who loſt his hat and periwig in the leap, and now began to think in good earneſt, that he was actually mounted on the back of the devil. He recommended himſelf to God, his reflection forſook him, his eyeſight and all his other ſenſes failed, he quitted the reins, and faſtening by inſtinct on the mane, was in this condition conveyed into the midſt of the ſportſmen, who were aſtoniſhed at the ſight of ſuch an apparition. Neither was their ſurprize to be wondered at, if we reflect on the figure that preſented itſelf to their view. The commodore's perſon was at all times an object of admiration;

admiration; much more ſo on this occaſion, when every ſingularity was aggravated by the circumſtances of his dreſs and diſaſter.

He had put on in honour of his nuptials his beſt coat of blue broad cloth, cut by a taylor of Ramſgate, and trimmed with five dozen of braſs buttons, large and ſmall; his breeches were of the ſame piece, faſtened at the knees with large bunches of tape; his waiſtcoat was of red pluſh lapelled with green velvet, and garniſhed with vellum holes; his boots bore an intimate reſemblance both in colour and ſhape to a pair of leather buckets; his ſhoulder was graced with a broad buff belt, from whence depended a huge hanger with a hilt like that of a backſword; and on each ſide of his pummel appeared a ruſty piſtol rammed in a caſe covered with a bear-ſkin. The loſs of his tye-periwig and laced hat, which were curioſities of the kind, did not at all contribute to the improvement of the picture, but on the contrary, by exhibiting his bald pate, and the natural extenſion of his lanthorn jaws, added to the peculiarity and extravagance of the whole. Such a ſpectacle could not have failed of diverting the whole company from the chace, had his horſe thought proper to purſue a different route, but the beaſt was too keen a ſporter to chooſe any other way than that which the ſtag followed; and therefore, without ſtopping to gratify the curioſity of the ſpectators, he in a few minutes outſtripped every hunter in the field. There being a deep hollow way betwixt him and the hounds, rather than ride round about the length of a furlong to a path that croſſed the lane, he tranſported himſelf at one jump, to the unſpeakable aſtoniſhment and terror of a waggoner

who chanced to be underneath, and ſaw this phenomenon fly over his carriage. This was not the only adventure he atchieved. The ſtag having taken a deep river that lay in his way, every man directed his courſe to a bridge in the neighbourhood; but our bridegroom's courſer deſpiſing all ſuch conveniences, plunged into the ſtream without heſitation, and ſwam in a twinkling to the oppoſite ſhore. This ſudden immerſion into an element of which Trunnion was properly a native, in all probability helped to recruit the exhauſted ſpirits of his rider, who at his landing on the other ſide gave ſome tokens of ſenſation, by hollowing aloud for aſſiſtance, which he could no' p(ſſibly receive, becauſe his horſe ſtill maintained the advantage he had gained, and would not allow himſelf to be overtaken.

In ſhort, after a long chace that laſted ſeveral hours, and extended to a dozen miles at leaſt, he was the firſt in at the death of the deer, being ſeconded by the lieutenant's gelding, which, actuated by the ſame ſpirit, had, without a rider, followed his companion's example.

Our bridegroom finding himſelf at laſt brought up, or, in other words, at the end of his career, took the opportunity of this firſt pauſe, to deſire the huntſmen would lend him a hand in diſmounting; and was by their condeſcenſion ſafely placed on the graſs, where he ſat ſtaring at the company as they came in, with ſuch wildneſs of aſtoniſhment in his looks, as if he had been a creature of another ſpecies, dropt among them from the clouds.

Before they had fleſhed the hounds, however, he recollected himſelf, and ſeeing one of the ſportſmen take a ſmall flaſk out of his pocket and apply

apply it to his mouth, judged the cordial to be no other than neat Coniac, which it really was! and expreſſing a deſire of participation, was immediately accommodated with a moderate doſe, which perfectly compleated his recovery.

By this time he and his two horſes had engroſſed the attention of the whole crowd; while ſome admired the elegant proportion and uncommon ſpirit of the two animals, the reſt contemplated the ſurpriſing appearance of their maſter, whom before they had only ſeen *en paſſant*; and at length, one of the gentlemen, accoſting him very courteouſly, ſignified his wonder at ſeeing him in ſuch an equipage, and aſked if he had not dropped his companion by the way. "Why, look ye, brother, (replied the commodore) mayhap you think me an odd ſort of a fellow, ſeeing me in this trim, eſpecially as I have loſt part of my rigging; but this here is the caſe, d'ye ſee: I weighed anchor from my own houſe this morning at ten A. M. with fair weather, and a favourable breeze at ſouth ſouth-eaſt, being bound to the next church on the voyage of matrimony: but howſomever, we had not run down a quarter of a league, when the wind ſhifting, blowed directly in our teeth; ſo that we were forced to tack all the way, d'ye ſee, and had almoſt beat up within ſight of port, when theſe ſons of bitches of horſes, which I had bought but two days before (for my own part, I believe they are devils incarnate) luffed round in a trice, and then refuſing the helm, drove away like lightning with me and my lieutenant, who ſoon came to anchor in an exceeding good birth. As for my own part, I have been carried over rocks, and flats, and quick-

ſands; among which I have pitched away a ſpecial good tye-periwig, and an iron bound hat; and at laſt, thank God! am got into ſmooth water and ſafe riding: but if ever I venture my carcaſe upon ſuch a hare'um ſcare'um blood of a bitch again, my name is not Hawſer Trunnion, d—n my eyes!"

One of the company, ſtruck with this name, which he had often heard, immediately laid hold on his declaration at the cloſe of this ſingular account; and obſerving that his horſes were very vicious, aſked how he intended to return? "As for that matter, (replied Mr. Trunnion) I am reſolved to hire a ſledge or waggon, or ſuch a thing as a jack-aſs; for I'll be d—n'd if ever I croſs the back of a horſe again." "And what do you propoſe to do with theſe creatures? (ſaid the other, pointing to the hunters) they ſeem to have ſome mettle; but then they are meer colts, and will take the devil and all of breaking, Methinks this hither one is ſhoulder ſlipped." "Damn them, (cried the commodore) I wiſh both their necks were broke, thof the two coſt me forty good yellow-boys." "Forty guineas! (exclaimed the ſtranger, who was a ſquire and a jocky, as well as owner of the pack) Lord! Lord! how a man may be impoſed upon! Why, theſe cattle are clumſy enough to go to plow: mind what a flat counter; do but obſerve how ſharp this here one is in the withers; then he's fired in the further fetlock." In ſhort, this connoiſſeur in horſe-fleſh, having diſcovered in them all the defects which can poſſibly be found in that ſpecies of animals, offered to give him ten guineas for the two, ſaying, he would convert them into beaſts of burthen. The owner, who (after what

what had happened) was very well diſpoſed to liſten to any thing that was ſaid to their prejudice, implicitly believed the truth of the ſtranger's aſſeverations, diſcharged a furious volley of oaths againſt the raſcal who had taken him in, and forthwith ſtruck a bargain with the ſquire, who paid him inſtantly for his purchaſe; in conſequence of which he won the plate at the next Canterbury races.

This affair being tranſacted to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties, as well as to the general entertainment of the company, who laughed in their ſleeves at the dexterity of their friend, Trunnion was ſet upon the ſquire's own horſe, and led by his ſervant in the midſt of this cavalcade, which proceeded to a neighbouring village, where they had beſpoke dinner, and where our bridegroom found means to provide himſelf with another hat and wig. With regard to his marriage, he bore his diſappointment with the temper of a philoſopher; and the exerciſe he had undergone having quickened his appetite, ſat down at table in the midſt of his new acquaintance, making a very hearty meal, and moiſtening every morſel with a draught of the ale, which he found very much to his ſatisfaction.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

He is found by the lieutenant; reconducted to his own house; married to Mrs. Grizzle, *who meets with a small misfortune in the night, and asserts her prerogative next morning: in consequence of which her husband's eye is endangered.*

MEAN while lieutenant Hatchway made shift to hobble to the church, where he informed the company of what had happened to the commodore; and the bride behaved with great decency on the occasion; for, as soon as she understood the danger to which her future husband was exposed, she fainted in the arms of her sister-in-law, to the surprize of all the spectators, who could not comprehend the cause of her disorder; and when she was recovered by the application of smelling-bottles, earnestly begged that Mr. Hatchway and Tom Pipes would take her brother's coach, and go in quest of their commander.

This task they readily undertook, being escorted by all the rest of his adherents on horseback; while the bride and her friends were invited to the parson's house, and the ceremony deferred till another occasion.

The lieutenant, steering his course as near the line of direction in which Trunnion went off, as the coach-road would permit, got intelligence of his track from one farm house to another; for such an apparition could not fail of attracting particular notice; and one of the horsemen having picked up his hat and wig in a bye-path, the whole troop

troop entered the village where he was lodged, about four o'clock in the afternoon. When they underſtood he was ſafely houſed at the George, they rode up to the door in a body, and expreſſed their ſatisfaction in three chears; which were returned by the company within, as ſoon as they were inſtructed in the nature of the ſalute by Trunnion, who by this time had entered into all the jollity of his new friends, and was indeed more than half ſeas over. The lieutenant was introduced to all preſent as his ſworn brother, and had ſomething toſſed up for his dinner. Tom Pipes and the crew were regaled in another room; and a freſh pair of horſes being put to the coach, about ſix in the evening the commodore, with all his attendants, departed for the gariſon, after having ſhook hands with every individual in the houſe.

Without any farther accident he was conveyed in ſafety to his own gate before nine, and committed to the care of Pipes, who carried him inſtantly to his hammock, while the lieutenant was driven away to the place where the bride and her friends remained in great anxiety, which vaniſhed when he aſſured them that his commodore was ſafe, being ſucceeded by abundance of mirth and pleaſantry at the account he gave of Trunnion's adventure.

Another day was fixed for the nuptials; and, in order to baulk the curioſity of idle people, which had given great offence, the parſon was prevailed upon to perform the ceremony in the gariſon, which all that day was adorned with flags and pendants diſplayed, and at night illuminated by the direction of Hatchway, who alſo ordered the patereroes to be fired as ſoon as the mar-

marriage knot was tied. Neither were the other parts of the entertainment neglected by this ingenious contriver, who produced undeniable proofs of his elegance and art in the wedding ſupper, which had been committed to his management and direction. This genial banquet was intirely compoſed of ſea-diſhes; a huge pillaw, conſiſting of a large piece of beef ſliced, a couple of fowls, and half a peck of rice, ſmoaked in the middle of the board: a diſh of hard fiſh ſwimming in oil appeared at each end, the ſides being furniſhed with a meſs of that ſavory compoſition known by the name of lob's courſe, and a plate of ſalmagundy. The ſecond courſe diſplayed a gooſe of a monſtrous magnitude, flanked with two Guinea hens, a pig barbecu'd, an hock of ſalt pork in the midſt of a peaſe pudding, a leg of mutton roaſted, with potatoes, and another boiled with yams. The third ſervice was made up of a loin of freſh pork with apple-ſauce, a kid ſmothered with onions, and a terrapin baked in the ſhell; and laſt of all, a prodigious ſea pye was preſented, with an infinite volume of pancakes and fritters. That every thing might be anſwerable to the magnificence of this delicate feaſt, he had provided vaſt quantites of ſtrong beer, flip, rumbo, and burnt brandy, with plenty of Barbadoes water for the ladies; and hired all the fiddles within ſix miles, who, with the addition of a drum, bag-pipe, and Welch-harp, regaled the gueſts with a moſt melodious concert.

The company, who were not at all exceptious, ſeemed extremely well pleaſed with every particular of the entertainment; and the evening being ſpent in the moſt ſocial manner, the bride was by her ſiſter conducted to her apartment,

where,

where, however, a trifling circumſtance had like to have deſtroyed the harmony which had been hitherto maintained.

I have already obſerved, that here was not one ſtanding bed within the walls; therefore the reader will not wonder that Mrs. Trunnion was out of humour, when ſhe found herſelf under the neceſſity of being confined with her ſpouſe in a hammock, which tho' enlarged with a double portion of canvas, and dilated with a yoke for the occaſion, was at beſt but a diſagreeable, not to ſay dangerous ſituation. She accordingly complained with ſome warmth of this inconvenience, which ſhe imputed to diſreſpect, and at firſt abſolutely refuſed to put up with the expedient: but Mrs. Pickle ſoon brought her to reaſon and compliance, by obſerving that one night would ſoon be elapſed, and next day ſhe might regulate her own œconomy.

Thus perſuaded, ſhe ventured into the vehicle, and was viſited by her huſband in leſs than an hour, the company being departed to their own homes, and the gariſon left to the command of his lieutenant and mate. But it ſeems the hooks that ſupported this ſwinging couch were not calculated for the addition of weight which they were now deſtined to bear; and therefore gave way in the middle of the night, to the no ſmall terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who perceiving herſelf falling, ſcreamed aloud, and by that exclamation brought Hatchway with a light into the chamber. Tho' ſhe had received no injury by the fall, ſhe was extremely diſcompoſed and incenſed at the accident, which ſhe even openly aſcribed to the obſtinacy and whimſical oddity of the commodore, in ſuch petulant terms as evidently declared that

ſhe

ſhe thought her great aim accompliſhed, and her authority ſecured againſt all the ſhocks of fortune. Indeed her bedfellow ſeemed to be of the ſame opinion, by his tacit reſignation; for he made no reply to her inſinuations, but with a moſt vinegar aſpect crawled out of his neſt, and betook himſelf to reſt in another apartment, while his irritated ſpouſe diſmiſſed the lieutenant, and from the wreck of the hammock made an occaſional bed for herſelf on the floor, fully determined to provide better accommodation for the next night's lodging.

Having no inclination to ſleep, her thoughts during the remaining part of the night were engroſſed by a ſcheme of reformation ſhe was reſolved to execute in the family; and no ſooner did the firſt lark bid ſalutation to the morn, than ſtarting from her humble couch, and huddling on her cloaths, ſhe ſallied from her chamber, explored her way thro' paths before unknown, and in the courſe of her reſearches perceived a large bell to which ſhe made ſuch effectual application as alarmed every ſoul in the family. In a moment ſhe was ſurrounded by Hatchway, Pipes, and all the reſt of the ſervants half dreſſed; but ſeeing none of the feminine gender appear, ſhe began to ſtorm at the ſloth and lazineſs of the maids, who, ſhe obſerved, ought to have been at work an hour at leaſt before ſhe called; and then, for the firſt time, underſtood that no woman was permitted to ſleep within the walls.

She did not fail to exclaim againſt this regulation: and being informed that the cook and chambermaid lodged in a ſmall office-houſe that ſtood without the gate, ordered the draw-bridge to be let down, and in perſon beat up their quarters,

quarters, commanding them forthwith to ſet about ſcouring the rooms, which had not been hitherto kept in a very decent condition, while two men were immediately employed to tranſport the bed on which ſhe uſed to lie from her brother's houſe to her new habitation; ſo that, in leſs than two hours, the whole œconomy of the gariſon was turned topſy-turvy, and every thing involved in tumult and noiſe. Trunnion being diſturbed and diſtracted with the uproar, turned out in his ſhirt like a maniac, and arming himſelf with a cudgel of crab-tree, made an irruption into his wife's apartment, where perceiving a couple of carpenters at work, in joining a bedſtead, he, with many dreadful oaths and opprobrious invectives, ordered them to deſiſt, ſwearing, he would ſuffer no bulk heads nor hurricane-houſes to ſtand where he was maſter: but finding his remonſtrances diſregarded by theſe mechanics, who believed him to be ſome madman belonging to the family, who had broke from his confinement, he aſſaulted them both with great fury and indignation, and was handled ſo roughly in the encounter, that in a very ſhort time he meaſured his length on the floor, in conſequence of a blow that he received from a hammer, by which the ſight of his remaining eye was grievouſly endangered.

Having thus reduced him to a ſtate of ſubjection, they reſolved to ſecure him with cords, and were actually buſy in adjuſting his fetters, when he was exempted from the diſgrace by the accidental entrance of his ſpouſe, who reſcued him from the hands of his adverſaries, and, in the midſt of her condolance, imputed his misfortune to the inconſiderate roughneſs of his own diſpoſition.

He

He breathed nothing but revenge, and made ſome efforts to chaſtiſe the inſolence of the workmen, who, as ſoon as they underſtood his quality, aſked forgiveneſs for what they had done with great humility, proteſting that they did not know he was maſter of the houſe. But, far from being ſatisfied with this apology, he groped about for the bell, (the inflammation of his eye having utterly deprived him of ſight) and the rope being, by the precaution of the delinquents, conveyed out of his reach, began to ſtorm with incredible vociferation, like a lion roaring in the toil, pouring forth innumerable oaths and execrations, and calling by name Hatchway and Pipes, who being within hearing, obeyed the extraordinary ſummons, and were ordered to put the carpenters in irons, for having audaciouſly aſſaulted him in his own houſe.

His myrmidons ſeeing he had been evil-intreated, were exaſperated at the inſult he had ſuffered, which they conſidered as an affront upon the dignity of the gariſon: the more ſo, as the mutineers ſeemed to put themſelves in a poſture of defence, and ſet their authority at defiance: they therefore unſheathed their cutlaſſes, which they commonly wore as badges of their commiſſion; and a deſperate engagement, in all probability, would have enſued, had not the lady of the caſtle interpoſed, and prevented the effects of their animoſity, by aſſuring the lieutenant that the commodore had been the aggreſſor; and that the workmen, finding themſelves attcked in ſuch an extraordinary manner, by a perſon whom they did not know, were obliged to act in their own defence,

fence, by which he had received that unlucky contuſion.

Mr. Hatchway no ſooner learnt the ſentiments of Mrs. Trunnion, than ſheathing his indignation, he told the commodore he ſhould always be ready to execute his lawful commands; but that he could not in conſcience be concerned in oppreſſing poor people who had been guilty of no offence.

This unexpected declaration, together with the behaviour of his wife, who in his hearing deſired the carpenters to reſume their work, filled the breaſt of Trunnion with rage and mortification. He pulled off his woollen night-cap, pummelled his bare pate, beat the floor alternately with his feet, ſwore his people had betrayed him, and curſed himſelf to the loweſt pit of hell, for having admitted ſuch a cockatrice into his family. But all theſe exclamations did not avail; they were among the laſt eſſays of his reſiſtance to the will of his wife, whoſe influence among his adherents had already ſwallowed up his own; and who now peremptorily told him, that he muſt leave the management of every thing within doors to her, who underſtood beſt what was for his honour and advantage. She then ordered a poultice to be prepared for his eye, which being applied, he was committed to the care of Pipes, by whom he was led about the houſe like a blind bear growling for prey, while his induſtrious yoke-fellow executed every circumſtance of the plan ſhe had projected; ſo that, when he recovered his viſion, he was an utter ſtranger in his own houſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The commodore being in ſome caſes reſtif, his lady has recourſe to artifice in the eſtabliſhment of her throne; ſhe exhibits ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the unſpeakable joy of Trunnion, *who nevertheleſs is baulked in his expectation.*

THESE innovations were not effected without many loud objections on his part; and divers curious dialogues paſſed between him and his yoke-fellow, who always came off victorious from the diſpute; inſomuch that his countenance gradually fell; he began to ſuppreſs, and at length intirely devoured his chagrin; the terrors of ſuperior authority were plainly perceivable in his features, and in leſs than three months he became a thorough-paced huſband. Not that his obſtinacy was extinguiſhed, tho' overcome; in ſome things he was as inflexible and muliſh as ever, but then he durſt not kick ſo openly, and was reduced to the neceſſity of being paſſive in his reſentments Mrs. Trunnion, for example, propoſed that a coach and ſix ſhould be purchaſed, as ſhe could not ride on horſeback, and the chaiſe was a ſcandalous carriage for a perſon of her condition; the commodore, conſcious of his own inferior capacity in point of reaſoning, did not think proper to diſpute the propoſal, but lent a deaf ear to her repeated remonſtrances, tho' they were enforced with every argument which ſhe thought could ſooth, terrify, ſhame or decoy him into compliance: in vain did ſhe urge the exceſs of affection ſhe had for him, as meriting ſome return of tenderneſs and condeſcenſion;

ſion; he was even proof againſt certain menacing hints ſhe gave, touching the reſentment of a ſlighted woman; and he ſtood out againſt all the conſiderations of dignity or diſgrace, like a bulwark of braſs. Neither was he moved to any indecent or unkind expreſſions of contradiction, even when ſhe upbraided him with his ſordid diſpoſition, and put him in mind of the fortune and honour he had acquired by his marriage, but ſeemed to retire within himſelf, like a tortoiſe when attacked, that ſhrinks within its ſhell, and ſilently endured the ſcourge of her reproaches, without ſeeming ſenſible of the ſmart.

This, however, was the only point in which ſhe had been baffled ſince her nuptials; and as ſhe could by no means digeſt the miſcarriage, ſhe tortured her invention for ſome new plan by which ſhe might augment her influence and authority: what her genius refuſed, was ſupplied by accident; for ſhe had not lived four months in the gariſon, when ſhe was ſeized with frequent qualms and reachings, her breaſts began to harden, and her ſtomach to be remarkably prominent: in a word, ſhe congratulated herſelf on the ſymptoms of her own fertility, and the commodore was tranſported with joy, at the proſpect of an heir of his own begetting.

She knew this was the proper ſeaſon for vindicating her own ſovereignty, and accordingly employed the means which nature had put in her power. There was not a rare piece of furniture and apparel for which ſhe did not long; and one day as ſhe went to church, ſeeing lady Stately's equipage arrive, ſhe ſuddenly fainted away. Her huſband, whoſe vanity had never been ſo perfectly gratified as with this promiſed harveſt of his own

ſowing, took the alarm immediately, and in order to prevent relapſes of that kind, which might be attended with fatal conſequences to his hope, gave her leave to beſpeak a coach, horſes and liveries to her own liking. Thus authorized, ſhe in a very little time exhibited ſuch a ſpecimen of her own taſte and magnificence, as afforded ſpeculation to the whole county, and made Trunnion's heart quake within him, becauſe he foreſaw no limits to her extravagance, which alſo manifeſted itſelf in the moſt expenſive preparations for her lying in.

Her pride, which had hitherto regarded the repreſentative of her father's houſe, ſeemed now to loſe all that hereditary reſpect, and prompt her to outſhine and undervalue the elder branch of her family. She behaved to Mrs. Pickle with a ſort of civil reſerve that implied a conſcious ſuperiority, and an emulation in point of grandeur immediately commenced between the two ſiſters. She every day communicated her importance to the whole pariſh, under pretence of taking the air in her coach, and endeavoured to extend her acquaintance among people of faſhion. Nor was this an undertaking attended with great difficulty, for all perſons whatever, capable of maintaining a certain appearance, will always find admiſſion into what is called the beſt company, and be rated in point of character according to their own valuation, without ſubjecting their pretenſions to the ſmalleſt doubt or examination. In all her viſits and parties ſhe ſeized every opportunity of declaring her preſent condition, obſerving that ſhe was forbid by her phyſicians to taſte ſuch a pickle, and that ſuch a diſh was poiſon to a woman in her way: nay, where ſhe was on a footing of familiarity

miliarity, ſhe affected to make wry faces, and complained that the young rogue began to be very unruly, writhing herſelf into divers contortions, as if ſhe had been grievouſly incommoded by the mettle of this future Trunnion. The huſband himſelf did not behave with all the moderation that might have been expected; at the club he frequently mentioned this circumſtance of his own vigour as a pretty ſucceſsful feat to be performed by an old fellow of fifty-five, and confirmed the opinion of his ſtrength by redoubled ſqueezes of the landlord's hand, which never failed of extorting a ſatisfactory certificate of his might. When his companions drank to the *Hans en kelder*, or Jack in the low cellar, he could not help diſplaying an extraordinary complacence of countenance, and ſignified his intention of ſending the young dog to ſea, as ſoon as he ſhould be able to carry a cartridge, in hopes of ſeeing him an officer before his own death.

This hope helped to conſole him under the extraordinary expence to which he was expoſed by the profuſion of his wife, eſpecially when he conſidered that his compliance with her prodigality would be limited to the expiration of the nine months, of which the beſt part was by this time elapſed; yet in ſpite of all this philoſophical reſignation, her fancy ſometimes ſoared to ſuch a ridiculous and intolerable pitch of inſolence and abſurdity, that his temper forſook him, and he could not help wiſhing in ſecret, that her pride might be confounded in the diſſipation of her moſt flattering hopes, even tho' he himſelf ſhould be a principal ſufferer by the diſappointment. Theſe, however, were no other than the ſuggeſtions of temporary diſguſts, that commonly ſubſided as

ſuddenly as they aroſe, and never gave the leaſt diſturbance to the perſon who inſpired them, becauſe he took care to conceal them carefully from her knowledge.

Mean while ſhe happily advanced in her reckoning, with the promiſe of a favourable iſſue; the term of her computation expired, and in the middle of the night ſhe was viſited by certain warnings that ſeemed to beſpeak the approach of the critical moment. The commodore got up with great alacrity, and called the midwife, who had been ſeveral days in the houſe; the goſſips were immediately ſummoned, and the moſt intereſting expectations prevailed; but the ſymptoms of labour gradually vaniſhed, and, as the matrons ſagely obſerved, this was no more than a falſe alarm.

Two nights after they received a ſecond intimation, and as ſhe was ſenſibly diminiſhed in the waiſt, every thing was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way; yet this viſitation was not more concluſive than the former; her pains wore off in ſpite of all her endeavours to encourage them, and the good women betook themſelves to their reſpective homes, in expectation of finding the third attack deciſive, alluding to the well known maxim, that *number three is always fortunate.* For once, however, this apothegm failed; the next call was altogether as ineffectual as the former; and moreover, attended with a phænomenon which to them was equally ſtrange and inexplicable: this was no other than ſuch a reduction in the ſize of Mrs. Trunnion as might have been expected after the birth of a full-grown child. Startled at ſuch an unaccountable event, they ſat in cloſe divan; and concluding that the caſe was

in

in all reſpects unnatural and prodigious, deſired that a meſſenger might be immediately diſpatched for ſome male practitioner in the art of midwifery.

The commodore, without gueſſing the cauſe of their perplexity, ordered Pipes immediately on this piece of duty; and in leſs than two hours they were aſſiſted by the advice of a ſurgeon of the neighbourhood, who boldly affirmed that the patient had never been with child. This aſſeveration was like a clap of thunder to Mr. Trunnion, who had been during eight whole days and nights in continual expectation of being hailed with the appellation of father.

After ſome recollection he ſwore the ſurgeon was an ignorant fellow, and that he would not take his word for what he advanced, being comforted and confirmed in his want of faith by the inſinuations of the midwife, who ſtill perſiſted to feed Mrs. Trunnion with hopes of a ſpeedy and ſafe delivery; obſerving that ſhe had been concerned in many a caſe of the ſame nature, where a fine child was found, even after all ſigns of the mother's pregnancy had diſappeared. Every twig of hope, how ſlender ſoever it may be, is eagerly caught hold on by people who find themſeves in danger of being diſappointed. To every queſtion propoſed by her to the lady with the preamble of "Han't you?" or "Don't you?" an anſwer was made in the affirmative, whether agreeable to truth or not, becauſe the reſpondent could not find in her heart to diſown any ſymptom that might favour the notion ſhe had ſo long indulged.

This experienced proficient in the obſtetric art was therefore kept in cloſe attendance for the

ſpace of three weeks, during which the patient had ſeveral returns of what ſhe pleaſed herſelf with believing to be labour pains, till at length ſhe and her huſband became the ſtanding joke of the pariſh; and this infatuated couple could ſcarce be prevailed upon to part with their hopes, even when ſhe appeared as lank as a greyhound, and they were furniſhed with other unqueſtionable proofs of their having been deceived. But they could not for ever remain under the influence of this ſweet deluſion, which at laſt faded away, and was ſucceeded by a paroxiſm of ſhame and confuſion, that kept the huſband within doors for the ſpace of a whole fortnight, and confined his lady to her bed for a ſeries of weeks, during which ſhe ſuffered all the anguiſh of the moſt intenſe mortification; yet even this was ſubdued by the lenient hand of time.

The firſt reſpite from her chagrin was employed in the ſtrict diſcharge of what are called the duties of religion, which ſhe performed with the moſt rancorous ſeverity, ſetting on foot a perſecution in her own family, that made the houſe too hot for all the menial ſervants, even ruffled the almoſt invincible indifference of Tom Pipes, harraſſed the commodore himſelf out of all patience, and ſpared no individual but lieutenant Hatchway, whom ſhe never ventured to diſoblige.

CHAP. XI.

Mrs. Trunnion *erects a tyranny in the garison, while her husband conceives an affection for his nephew* Perry, *who manifests a peculiarity of disposition even in his tender years.*

HAVING exercised herself three months in such pious amusements, she appeared again in the world; but her misfortune had made such an impression on her mind, that she could not bear the sight of a child, and trembled whenever the conversation happened to turn upon a christening. Her temper, which was naturally none of the sweetest, seemed to have imbibed a double proportion of souring from her disappointment; of consequence her company was not much coveted, and she found very few people disposed to treat her with those marks of consideration which she looked upon as her due. This neglect detached her from the society of an unmannerly world; she concentred the energy of all her talents in the government of her own house, which groaned accordingly under her arbitrary sway, and in the brandy-bottle found ample consolation for all the affliction she had undergone.

As for the commodore, he in a little time weathered his disgrace, after having sustained many severe jokes from the lieutenant; and now his chief aim being to be absent from his own house as much as possible, he frequented the public-house more than ever, more assiduously cultivated the friendship of his brother-in-law Mr. Pickle, and in the course of their intimacy conceived an

affection for his nephew Perry, which did not end but with his life. Indeed it muſt be owned that Trunnion was not naturally deficient in the ſocial paſſions of the ſoul, which, tho' they were ſtrangely warped, diſguiſed and overborne by the circumſtances of his boiſterous life and education, did not fail to maniſeſt themſelves occaſionally thro' the whole courſe of his behaviour.

As all the hopes of propagating his own name had periſhed, and his relations lay under the interdiction of his hate, it is no wonder that thro' the familiarity and friendly intercourſe ſubſiſting between him and Mr. Gamaliel, he contracted a liking for the boy, who by this time entered the third year of his age, and was indeed a very handſome, healthy and promiſing child; and what ſeemed to ingratiate him ſtill more with his uncle, was a certain oddity of diſpoſition for which he had been remarkable even from his cradle. It is reported of him, that before the firſt year of his infancy was elapſed, he uſed very often, immediately after being dreſſed, in the midſt of the careſſes which were beſtowed upon him by his mother while ſhe indulged herſelf in the contemplation of her own happineſs, all of a ſudden to alarm her with a fit of ſhrieks and cries, which continued with great violence till he was ſtripped to the ſkin with the utmoſt expedition by order of his affrighted parent, who thought his tender body was tortured by the miſapplication of ſome unlucky pin; and when he had given them all this diſturbance and unneceſſary trouble, he would lie ſprawling and laughing in their faces as if he ridiculed the impertinence of their concern. Nay, it is affirmed, that one day, when an old woman who attended in the nurſery had by ſtealth

ſtealth conveyed a bottle of cordial waters to her mouth, he pulled his nurſe by the ſleeve; and by a ſlight glance detecting the theft, tipt her the wink with a particular ſlyneſs of countenance, as if he had ſaid with a ſneer, "Ay, "ay, that is what you muſt all come to." But theſe inſtances of reflection in a babe nine months old are ſo incredible, that I look upon them as *ex poſt facto* obſervations, founded upon imaginary recollection, when he was in a more advanced age, and his peculiarities of temper became much more remarkable; of a piece with the ingenious diſcoveries of thoſe ſagacious obſervers; who can diſcern ſomething evidently characteriſtic in the features of any noted perſonage whoſe character they have previouſly heard explained; yet, without pretending to ſpecify at what period of his childhood this ſingularity firſt appeared, I can with great truth declare, that when he firſt attracted the notice and affection of his uncle, it was plainly perceivable.

One would imagine he had marked out the commodore as a proper object of ridicule, for almoſt all his little childiſh ſatire was levelled againſt him. I will not deny that he might have been influenced in this particular by the example and inſtruction of Mr. Hatchway, who delighted in ſuperintending the firſt eſſays of his genius. As the gout had taken up its reſidence in Mr. Trunnion's great toe, from whence it never removed, no not for a day, little Perry took great pleaſure in treading by accident on this infirm member; and when his uncle, inconſed by the pain, uſed to damn him for a hell begotten brat, he would appeaſe him in a twinkling by returning the curſe with equal emphaſis, and aſking what

was the matter with old Hannibal Tough? an appellation by which the lieutenant had taught him to diſtinguiſh this grim commander.

Neither was this the only experiment he tried upon the patience of the commodore, with whoſe noſe he uſed to take indecent freedoms even while he was fondled on his knee; in one month he put him to the expence of two guineas in ſeal-ſkin, by picking his pocket of divers tobacco pouches, all of which he in ſecret committed to the flames. Nor did the caprice of his diſpoſition abſtain from the favourite beverage of Trunnion, who more than once ſwallowed a whole draught in which his brother's ſnuff-box had been emptied, before he perceived the diſagreeable infuſion: and one day, when the commodore had chaſtiſed him by a gentle tap with his cane, he fell flat on the floor as if he had been deprived of all ſenſe and motion, to the terror and amazement of the ſtriker; and after having filled the whole houſe with confuſion and diſmay, opened his eyes and laughed heartily at the ſucceſs of his own impoſition.

It would be an endleſs and perhaps no very agreeable taſk, to enumerate all the unlucky pranks he played upon his uncle and others, before he attained the fourth year of his age; about which time he was ſent, with an attendant, to a day-ſchool in the neighbourhood, that (to uſe his good mother's own expreſſion) he might be out of harm's way. Here, however, he made little progreſs, except in miſchief, which he practiſed with impunity, becauſe the ſchool-miſtreſs would run no riſk of diſobliging a lady of fortune, by exerciſing unneceſſary ſeverities upon her only child. Nevertheleſs Mrs. Pickle was not

not ſo blindly partial as to be pleaſed with ſuch unſeaſonable indulgence. Perry was taken out of the hands of this courteous teacher, and committed to the inſtruction of a pedagogue, who was ordered to adminiſter ſuch correction as the boy ſhould in his opinion deſerve. This authority he did not neglect to uſe; his pupil was regularly flogged twice a day, and after having been ſubjected to this courſe of diſcipline for the ſpace of eighteen months, declared the moſt obſtinate, dull and untoward genius that ever had fallen under his cultivation; inſtead of being reformed, he ſeemed rather hardened and confirmed in his vicious inclinations, and was dead to all ſenſe of fear as well as ſhame. His mother was extremely mortified at theſe ſymptoms of ſtupidity, which ſhe conſidered as an inheritance derived from the ſpirit of his father, and conſequently inſurmountable by all the efforts of human care. But the commodore rejoiced over the ruggedneſs of his nature, and was particularly pleaſed when upon inquiry he found that Perry had beaten all the boys in the ſchool; a circumſtance from which he prognoſticated every thing that was fair and fortunate in his future fate; obſerving, that at his age he himſelf was juſt ſuch another. The boy, who was now turned of ſix, having profited ſo little under the birch of his unſparing governor, Mrs. Pickle was counſelled to ſend him to a boarding ſchool not far from London, which was kept by a certain perſon very eminent for his ſucceſsful method of education. This advice ſhe the more readily embraced, becauſe at that time ſhe found herſelf pretty far gone with another child, that ſhe hoped would conſole her for the diſappointment ſhe had met

with in the unpromiſing talents of Perry, or at any rate divide her concern, ſo as to enable her to endure the abſence of either.

CHAP. XII.

Peregrine *is ſent to a boarding-ſchool, becomes remarkable for his genius and ambition.*

THE commodore underſtanding her determination, to which her huſband did not venture to make the leaſt objection, intereſted himſelf ſo much in behalf of his favourite, as to fit him out at his own charge, and accompany him in perſon to the place of his deſtination; where he defrayed the expence of his entrance, and left him to the particular care and inſpection of the uſher, who having been recommended to him as a perſon of parts and integrity, received *per* advance a handſome conſideration for the taſk he undertook.

Nothing could be better judged than this piece of liberality; the aſſiſtant was actually a man of learning, probity, and good ſenſe; and though obliged by the ſcandalous adminiſtration of fortune to act in the character of an inferior teacher, had, by his ſole capacity and application, brought the ſchool to that degree of reputation which it never could have obtained from the talents of his ſuperior. He had eſtabliſhed an œconomy, which, though regular, was not at all ſevere, by enacting a body of laws ſuited to the age and comprehenſion of every individual; and each tranſgreſſor was fairly tried by his peers, and puniſhed accord-

according to the verdict of the jury. No boy was ſcourged for want of apprehenſion, but a ſpirit of emulation was raiſed by well-timed praiſe and artful compariſon, and maintained by a diſtribution of ſmall prizes, which were adjudged to thoſe who ſignalized themſelves either by their induſtry, ſobriety, or genius. This tutor, whoſe name was Jennings, began with Perry, according to his conſtant maxim, by examining the ſoil; that is, ſtudying his temper, in order to conſult the biaſs of his diſpoſition, which was ſtrangely perverted by the abſurd diſcipline he had undergone. He found him in a ſtate of ſullen inſenſibility, which the child had gradually contracted in a long courſe of ſtupifying correction; and at firſt he was not in the leaſt actuated by that commendation which animated the reſt of his ſchool-fellows; nor was it in the power of reproach to excite his ambition, which had been buried, as it were, in the grave of diſgrace: the uſher therefore had recourſe to contemptuous neglect, with which he affected to treat this ſtubborn ſpirit; foreſeeing that if he retained any ſeeds of ſentiment, this weather would infallibly raiſe them into vegetation: his judgment was juſtified by the event; the boy in a little time began to make obſervations; he perceived the marks of diſtinction with which virtue was rewarded, grew aſhamed of the deſpicable figure he himſelf made among his companions, who far from courting, rather ſhunned his converſation; and actually pined at his own want of importance.

Mr. Jennings ſaw and rejoiced at his mortification, which he ſuffered to proceed as far as poſſible, without endangering his health. The child

loſt

loſt all reliſh for diverſion, loathed his food, grew penſive, ſolitary, and was frequently found weeping by himſelf. Theſe ſymptoms plainly evinced the recovery of his feelings, to which his governor thought it now high time to make application; and therefore by little and little altered his behaviour from the indifference he had put on, to the appearance of more regard and attention. This produced a favourable change in the boy, whoſe eyes ſparkled with ſatisfacton one day, when his maſter expreſſed himſelf with a ſhew of ſurpriſe in theſe words, "So, Perry! I find you don't want genius, when you think proper to uſe it." Such encomiums kindled the ſpirit of emulation in his little breaſt; he exerted himſelf with ſurpriſing alacrity, by which he ſoon acquitted himſelf of the imputation of dullneſs, and obtained ſundry honorary ſilver pennies, as acknowledgments of his application: his ſchool-fellows now ſolicited his friendſhip as eagerly as they had avoided it before; and in leſs than a twelvemonth after his arrival, this ſuppoſed dunce was remarkable for the brightneſs of his parts; having in that ſhort period learnt to read Engliſh perfectly well, made great progreſs in writing, enabled himſelf to ſpeak the French language without heſitation, and acquired ſome knowledge in the rudiments of the Latin tongue. The uſher did not fail to tranſmit an account of his proficiency to the commodore, who received it with tranſport, and forthwith communicated the happy tidings to the parents.

Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, who was never ſubject to violent emotions, heard them with a ſort of phlegmatic ſatisfaction that ſcarce manifeſted itſelf either in his countenance or expreſſions; nor did

did the child's mother break forth into that rapture and admiration which might have been expected, when ſhe underſtood how much the talents of her firſt-born had exceeded the hope of her warmeſt imagination. Not but that ſhe profeſſed herſelf well pleaſed with Perry's reputation; though ſhe obſerved that in theſe commendations the truth was always exaggerated by ſchool-maſters, for their own intereſt; and pretended to wonder that the uſher had not mingled more probability with his praiſe. Trunnion was offended at her indifference and want of faith, and believing that ſhe refined too much in her diſcernment, ſwore that Jennings had declared the truth, and nothing but the truth; for he himſelf had prophecied from the beginning, that the boy would turn out a credit to his family. But by this time Mrs. Pickle was bleſſed with a daughter, whom ſhe had brought into the world about ſix months before the intelligence arrived; ſo that her care and affection being otherwiſe engroſſed, the praiſe of Perry was the leſs greedily devoured. The abatement of her fondneſs was an advantage to his education, which would have been retarded, and perhaps ruined by pernicious indulgence and prepoſterous interpoſition, had her love conſidered him as an only child; whereas her concern being now diverted to another object that ſhared, at leaſt, one half of her affection, he was left to the management of his preceptor, who tutored him according to his own plan, without any lett or interruption. Indeed all his ſagacity and circumſpection were but barely ſufficient to keep the young gentleman in order; for now that he had won the palm of victory from his rivals in point of ſcholarſhip, his ambition dilated, and

he

he was ſeized with the deſire of ſubjecting the whole ſchool by the valour of his arm. Before he could bring his project to bear, innumerable battles were fought with various ſucceſs; every day a bloody noſe and complaint were preſented againſt him, and his own viſage commonly bore ſome livid marks of obſtinate contention. At length, however, he accompliſhed his aim; his adverſaries were ſubdued, his proweſs acknowledged, and he obtained the laurel in war as well as in wit. Thus triumphant, he was intoxicated with ſucceſs. His pride roſe in proportion to his power, and in ſpite of all the endeavours of Jennings, who practiſed every method he could invent for curbing his licentious conduct, without depreſſing his ſpirit, he contracted a large proportion of inſolence, which a ſeries of misfortunes that happened to him in the ſequel could ſcarce effectually tame. Nevertheleſs there was a fund of good nature and generoſity in his compoſition; and though he eſtabliſhed a tyranny among his comrades, the tranquillity of his reign was maintained by the love rather than by the fear of his ſubjects.

In the midſt of all this enjoyment of empire, he never once violated that reſpectful awe with which the uſher had found means to inſpire him; but he by no means preſerved the ſame regard for the principal maſter, an old illiterate German quack, who had formerly practiſed corn-cutting among the quality, and ſold coſmetic waſhes to the ladies, together with teeth powders, hair-dying liquors, prolific elixirs, and tinctures to ſweeten the breath. Theſe noſtrums, recommended by the art of cringing, in which he was conſummate, ingratiated him ſo much with people

of

of faſhion, that he was enabled to ſet up ſchool with five and twenty boys of the beſt families, whom he boarded on his own terms, and undertook to inſtruct in the French and Latin languages, ſo as to qualify them for the colleges of Weſtminſter and Eaton. While this plan was in its infancy, he was ſo fortunate as to meet with Jennings, who for the paultry conſideration of thirty pounds a year, which his neceſſities compelled him to accept, took the whole trouble of educating the children upon himſelf, contrived an excellent ſyſtem for that purpoſe, and by his aſſiduity and knowledge executed all the particulars to the entire ſatisfaction of thoſe concerned, who, by the bye, never inquired into his qualifications, but ſuffered the other to enjoy the fruits of his labour and ingenuity.

Over and above a large ſtock of avarice, ignorance and vanity, this ſuperior had certain ridiculous peculiarities in his perſon, ſuch as a hunch upon his back, and diſtorted limbs, that ſeemed to attract the ſatyrical notice of Peregrine, who, young as he was, took offence at his want of reverence for his uſher, over whom he ſometimes choſe opportunities of diſplaying his authority, that the boys might not diſplace their veneration. Mr. Keypſtick, therefore, ſuch as I have deſcribed him, incurred the contempt and diſpleaſure of this enterpriſing pupil, who now being in the tenth year of his age, had capacity enough to give him abundance of vexation. He underwent many mortifying jokes from the invention of Pickle and his confederates; ſo that he began to entertain ſuſpicion of Mr. Jennings, who he could not help thinking had been at the bottom of them all, and ſpirited up principles of rebellion in

in the ſchool, with a view of making himſelf independent. Poſſeſſed with this chimera, which was void of all foundation, the German deſcended ſo low as to tamper in private with the boys, from whom he hoped to draw ſome very important diſcovery; but he was diſappointed in his expectation; and this mean practice reaching the ears of his uſher, he voluntarily reſigned his employment. Finding intereſt to obtain holy orders in a little time after, he left the kingdom, hoping to find a ſettlement in ſome of our American plantations.

The departure of Mr. Jennings produced a great revolution in the affairs of Keypſtick, which declined from that moment, becauſe he had neither authority to enforce obedience, nor prudence to maintain order among his ſcholars; ſo that the ſchool degenerated into anarchy and confuſion, and he himſelf dwindled in the opinion of his employers, who looked upon him as ſuperannuated, and withdrew their children from his tuition.

Peregrine ſeeing this diſſolution of their ſociety, and finding himſelf every day deprived of ſome companion, began to repine at his ſituation, and reſolved, if poſſible, to procure his releaſe from the juriſdiction of the perſon whom he both deteſted and deſpiſed. With this view he went to work, and compoſed the following billet, addreſſed to the commodore, which was the firſt ſpecimen of his compoſition in the epiſtolary way.

Honoured and loving uncle,

HOping you are in good health, this ſerves to inform you, that Mr. Jennings is gone, and Mr. Keypſtick will never meet with his fellow.

low. The ſchool is already almoſt broke up, and the reſt daily going away; and I beg of you of all love to have me fetched away alſo, for I cannot bear to be any longer under one who is a perfect ignoramus, who ſcarce knows the declination of *muſa*, and is more fit to be a ſcare-crow than a ſchool-maſter; hoping you will ſend for me ſoon, with my love to my aunt and my duty to my honoured parents, craving their bleſſing and yours. And this is all at preſent from, honoured uncle, your well-beloved and dutiful nephew and godſon, and humble ſervant to command 'till death,

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Trunnion was overjoyed at the receipt of this letter, which he looked upon as one of the greateſt efforts of human genius, and as ſuch communicated the contents to his lady, whom he had diſturbed for the purpoſe in the middle of her devotion, by ſending a meſſage to her cloſet, whither it was her cuſtom very frequently to retire. She was out of humour at being interrupted, and therefore did not peruſe this ſpecimen of her nephew's underſtanding with all the reliſh that the commodore himſelf had enjoyed; on the contrary, after ſundry paralytical endeavours to ſpeak, (for her tongue ſometimes refuſed its office) ſhe obſerved that the boy was a pert jackanapes, and deſerved to be ſeverely chaſtiſed for treating his betters with ſuch diſreſpect. Her huſband undertook his godſon's defence, repreſenting with great warmth that he knew Keypſtick to be a good for nothing pimping old raſcal, and that

that Perry ſhewed a great deal of ſpirit and good ſenſe in deſiring to be taken from under his command; he therefore declared that the boy ſhould not live a week longer with ſuch a ſhambling ſon of a bitch, and ſanctioned his declaration with abundance of oaths.

Mrs. Trunnion compoſing her countenance into a look of religious demureneſs, rebuked him for his profane way of talking; and aſked in a magiſterial tone if he intended never to lay aſide that brutal behaviour? Irritated at this reproach, he anſwered in terms of indignation, that he knew how to behave himſelf as well as e'er a woman that wore a head, bad her mind her own affairs, and with another repetition of oaths gave her to underſtand that he would be maſter in his own houſe.

This inſinuation operated upon her ſpirits like friction upon a glaſs globe; her face gleamed with reſentment, and every pore ſeemed to emit particles of flame. She replied with incredible fluency of the bittereſt expreſſions. He retorted equal rage in broken hints and incoherent imprecations. She rejoined with redoubled fury, and in concluſion he was fain to betake himſelf to flight, ejaculating curſes againſt her; and muttering ſomething concerning the brandy-bottle, which, however, he took care ſhould never reach her ears.

From his own houſe he went directly to viſit Mrs. Pickle, to whom he imparted Peregrine's epiſtle with many encomiums upon the boy's promiſing parts; and finding his commendations but coldly received, deſired ſhe would permit him to take his godſon under his own care.

This

This lady, whoſe family was now increaſed by another ſon who ſeemed to ingroſs her care for the preſent, had not ſeen Perry during a courſe of four years, and with regard to him, was perfectly weaned of that infirmity known by the name of maternal fondneſs; ſhe therefore conſented to the commodore's requeſt with great condeſcenſion, and a polite compliment to him on the concern he had all along manifeſted for the welfare of the child.

****

CHAP. XIII.

The commodore takes Peregrine *under his own care. The boy arrives at the gariſon;—is ſtrangely received by his own mother;—enters into a confederacy with* Hatchway *and* Pipes, *and executes a couple of waggiſh enterprizes upon his aunt.*

TRunnion, having obtained this permiſſion, that very afternoon diſpatched the lieutenant in a poſt-chaiſe to Keypſtick's houſe, from whence in two days he returned with our young hero; who being now in the eleventh year of his age, had outgrown the expectation of all his family, and was remarkable for the beauty and elegance of his perſon. His godfather was tranſported at his arrival, as if he had been actually the iſſue of his own loins. He ſhook him heartily by the hand, turned him round and round, ſurveyed him from top to bottom, bad Hatchway take notice how handſomely he was built; ſqueezed his hand again, ſaying, "Damn ye, you

you dog, I ſuppoſe you don't value ſuch an old crazy ſon of a bitch as me, a rope's end. You have forgot how I wont to dandle you on my knee, when you was a little urchin no bigger than the Davit, and played a thouſand tricks upon me, burning my bacco-pouches and poiſoning my rumbo: O! damn ye, you can grin faſt enough I ſee; I warrant you have learnt more things than writing and the Latin lingo." Even Tom Pipes expreſſed uncommon ſatisfaction on this joyful occaſion; and coming up to Perry, thruſt forth his fore paw, and accoſted him with the ſalutation of "What chear, my young maſter? I am glad to ſee thee with all my heart." Theſe compliments being paſſed, his uncle halted to the door of his wife's chamber, at which he ſtood hollowing, "Here's your kinſman Perry, belike you won't come and bid him welcome." "Lord! Mr. Trunnion, ſaid ſhe, why will you continually harraſs me in this manner with your impertinent intruſion?" "I harrow you, replied the commodore; 'ſblood! I believe your upper works are damaged, I only came to inform you that here was your couſin, whom you have not ſeen theſe four long years; and I'll be damned if there is ſuch another of his age within the king's dominions, d'ye ſee, either for make or mettle; he's a credit to the name, d'ye ſee, but damn my eyes I'll ſay no more of the matter; if you come you may, if you won't you may let it alone." "Well, I won't come then (anſwered his yoke-fellow) for I am at preſent more agreeably employed." "Oho! you are? I believe ſo too;" cried the commodore, making wry faces and mimicking the action of dram drinking. Then addreſſing him-

himſelf to Hatchway, "Prithee Jack, (ſaid he) go and try thy ſkill on that ſtubborn hulk; if any body can bring her about I know you wool." The lieutenant accordingly taking his ſtation at the door, conveyed his perſuaſion in theſe words, "What won't you turn out and hail little Perry? It will do your heart good to ſee ſuch a handſome young dog; I'm ſure he is the very moral of you, and as like, as if he had been ſpit out of your own mouth, as the ſaying is; do ſhew a little reſpect for your kinſman, can't you?" To this remonſtrance ſhe replied in a mild tone of voice, "Dear Mr. Hatchway, you are always teazing one in ſuch a manner; ſure I am, no body can tax me with unkindneſs, or want of natural affection;" ſo ſaying, ſhe opened the door, and advancing to the hall where her nephew ſtood, received him very graciouſly, and obſerved that he was the very image of her papa.

In the afternoon he was conducted by the commodore to the houſe of his parents; and ſtrange to tell, no ſooner was he preſented to his mother than her countenance changed, ſhe eyed him with tokens of affliction and ſurprize, and burſting into tears, exclaimed her child was dead, and this was no other than an impoſtor whom they had brought to defraud her ſorrow. Trunnion was confounded at this unaccountable paſſion, which had no other foundation than caprice and whim; and Gamaliel himſelf ſo diſconcerted and unſettled in his own belief, which began to waver, that he knew not how to behave towards the boy, whom his godfather immediately carried back to the garriſon, ſwearing all the way that Perry ſhould never croſs their threſhold again with his good-

will,

will. Nay, ſo much was he incenſed at this unnatural and abſurd renunciation, that he refuſed to carry on any further correſpondence with Pickle, until he was appeaſed by his ſolicitations and ſubmiſſion, and Peregrine owned as his ſon and heir. But this acknowledgment was made without the privity of his wife, whoſe vicious averſion he was obliged, in appearance, to adopt. Thus exiled from his father's houſe, the young gentleman was left entirely to the diſpoſal of the commodore, whoſe affection for him daily increaſed, inſomuch that he could ſcarce prevail upon himſelf to part with him, when his education abſolutely required that he ſhould be otherwiſe diſpoſed of.

In all probability, this extraordinary attachment was, if not produced, at leaſt rivetted by that peculiar turn in Peregrine's imagination, which we have already obſerved; and which, during his reſidence in the caſtle, appeared in ſundry ſtratagems he practiſed upon his uncle and aunt, under the auſpices of Mr. Hatchway, who aſſiſted him in the contrivance and execution of all his ſchemes. Nor was Pipes exempted from a ſhare in their undertakings; for, being a truſty fellow, not without dexterity in ſome caſes, and altogether reſigned to their will, they found him a ſerviceable inſtrument for their purpoſe, and uſed him accordingly.

The firſt ſample of their art was exhibited upon Mrs. Trunnion. They terrified that good lady with ſtrange noiſes when ſhe retired to her devotion. Pipes was a natural genius in the compoſition of diſcords; he could imitate the ſounds produced by the winding of a jack, the filing of a ſaw, and the ſwinging of a malefactor hanging in chains;

he could counterfeit the braying of an aſs, the ſcreeching of a night owl, the caterwauling of cats, the howling of a dog, the ſqueaking of a pig, the crowing of a cock; and he had learned the war hoop, uttered by the Indians in North America. Theſe talents were exerted ſucceſſively at different times and places, to the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, the diſcompoſure of the commodore himſelf, and the conſternation of all the ſervants in the caſtle. Peregrine with a ſheet over his cloaths, ſometimes tumbled before his aunt in the twilight, when her organs of viſion were a little impaired by the cordial ſhe had ſwallowed; and the boatſwain's mate taught him to ſhoe cats with walnut-ſhells, ſo that they made a moſt dreadful clattering in their nocturnal excurſions. The mind of Mrs. Trunnion was not a little diſturbed by theſe alarms, which, in her opinion, portended the death of ſome principal perſon in the family; ſhe redoubled her religious exerciſes, and fortified her ſpirits with freſh potations; nay ſhe began to take notice that Mr. Trunnion's conſtitution was very much broke, and ſeemed diſſatisfied when people obſerved that they never ſaw him look better. Her frequent viſits to the cloſet, where all her conſolation was depoſited, inſpired the confederates with a device which had like to have been attended with tragical conſequences. They found an opportunity to infuſe jallap in one of her caſe bottles, and ſhe took ſo largely of this medicine, that her conſtitution had well nigh ſunk under the violence of it's effect. She ſuffered a ſucceſſion of fainting fits that reduced her to the brink of the grave, in ſpite of all the remedies that were adminiſtred by a phyſician who was called in the beginning of

her diſorder. After having examined the ſymptoms, he declared that the patient had been poiſoned with arſenic, and preſcribed oily draughts and lubricating injections to defend the coats of the ſtomach and inteſtines from the vellicating particles of that pernicious mineral; at the ſame time hinting with a look of infinite ſagacity, that it was not difficult to divine the whole myſtery. He affected to deplore the poor lady, as if ſhe was expoſed to more attempts of the ſame nature; thereby glancing obliquely at the innocent commodore, whom the officious ſon of Æſculapius ſuſpected as the author of this expedient, to rid his hands of a yoke-fellow for whom he was well known to have no great devotion. This impertinent and malicious inſinuation made ſome impreſſion upon the by-ſtanders, and furniſhed ample field for ſlander, to aſperſe the morals of Trunnion, who was repreſented through the whole diſtrict, as a monſter of barbarity. Nay, the ſufferer herſelf, though ſhe behaved with great decency and prudence, could not help entertaining ſome ſmall diffidence of her huſband; not that ſhe imagined he had any deſign upon her life, but that he had been at pains to adulterate the brandy, with a view of detaching her from that favourite liquor.

On this ſuppoſition ſhe reſolved to act with more caution for the future, without ſetting on foot any inquiry about the affair; while the commodore imputing her indiſpoſition to ſome natural cauſe, after the danger was paſt, never beſtowed a thought upon the ſubject; ſo that the perpetrators were quit of their fear, which, however, had puniſhed them ſo effectually, that they never

never would hazard any more jokes of the ſame nature.

The ſhafts of their wit were now directed againſt the commander himſelf, whom they teized and terrified almoſt out of his ſenſes. One day while he was at dinner, Pipes came and told him that there was a perſon below that wanted to ſpeak with him immediately about an affair of the greateſt importance, that would admit of no delay; upon which he ordered the ſtranger to be told that he was engaged, and that he muſt ſend up his name and buſineſs. To this demand he received for anſwer a meſſage, importing that the perſon's name was unknown to him, and his buſineſs of ſuch a nature, that it could not be diſcloſed to any one but the commodore himſelf, whom he earneſtly deſired to ſee without loſs of time.

Trunnion, ſurpriſed at this importunity, got up with great reluctance in the middle of his meal, and deſcending to a parlour where the ſtranger was, aſked in a ſurly tone what he wanted with him in ſuch a damned hurry, that he could not wait till he had made an end of his meſs. The other, not at all diſconcerted at this rough addreſs, advanced cloſe up to him on his tiptoes, and with a look of confidence and conceit, laying his mouth to one ſide of the commodore's head, whiſpered ſoftly in his ear, "Sir, I am the attorney whom you wanted to converſe with in private." "The attorney!" cried Trunnion, ſtareing and half choaked with choler. "Yes, Sir, at your ſervice, replied this retainer to the law, and if you pleaſe, the ſooner we diſpatch the affa the better; for 'tis an old obſervation, that d breeds danger." "Truly, brother, ſaid the

lay commodore,

modore, who could no longer contain himſelf, I do confeſs that I am very much of your way of thinking, d'ye ſee; and therefore you ſhall be diſpatched in a trice;" ſo ſaying he lifted up his walking ſtaff, which was ſomething between a crutch and a cudgel, and diſcharged it with ſuch energy on the ſeat of the attorney's underſtanding, that if there had been any thing but ſolid bone, the contents of his ſkull muſt have been evacuated.

Fortified as he was by nature againſt all ſuch aſſaults, he could not withſtand the momentum of the blow, which in an inſtant laid him flat on the floor, deprived of all ſenſe and motion; and Trunnion hopped up ſtairs to dinner, applauding himſelf in ejaculations all the way for the vengeance he had taken on ſuch an impudent pettifogging miſcreant.

The attorney no ſooner awaked from his trance, into which he had been ſo unexpectedly lulled, than he caſt his eyes around in queſt of evidence, by which he might be enabled the more eaſily to prove the injury he had ſuſtained; but not a ſoul appearing, he made ſhift to get upon his legs again, and with the blood trickling over his noſe, followed one of the ſervants into the dining-room, reſolved to come to an explanation with the aſſailant, and either extort money from him by way of ſatisfaction, or provoke him to a ſecond application before witneſſes. With this view he entered the room in a peal of clamour, to the amazement of all preſent, and the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who ſhrieked at the appearance of ſuch a ſpectacle; and addreſſing himſelf to the commodore, "I'll tell you what, Sir, ſaid he, if there be law in England, I'll make you ſmart for

for this here aſſault; you think you have ſcreened yourſelf from a proſecution, by ſending all your ſervants out of the way, but that circumſtance will appear upon trial to be a plain proof of the malice propenſe with which the fact was committed: eſpecially when corroborated by the evidence of this here letter, under your own hand, whereby I am deſired to come to your own houſe to tranſact an affair of conſequence; ſo ſaying, he produced the writing, and read the contents in theſe words.

Mr. ROGER RAVINE,

Sir,

BEING in a manner priſoner in my own houſe, I deſire you will give me a call preciſely at three o'clock in the afternoon, and inſiſt upon ſeeing myſelf, as I have an affair of great conſequence, in which your particular advice is wanted by your humble ſervant,

HAWSER TRUNNION.

The one-eyed commander, who had been ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had already beſtowed upon the plaintiff, hearing him read this audacious piece of forgery, which he conſidered as the effect of his own villany, ſtarted up from table, and ſeizing a huge turkey that lay in a diſh before him, would have applied it ſauce and all by way of poultice to his wound, had he not been reſtrained by Hatchway, who laid faſt hold on both his arms, and fixed him to his chair again, adviſing the attorney to ſheer off with what he had got. Far from following this ſalutary counſel,

he redoubled his threats, and ſet Trunnion at defiance, telling him he was not a man of true courage, although he had commanded a ſhip of war, or elſe he would not have attacked any perſon in ſuch a cowardly and clandeſtine manner. This provocation would have anſwered his purpoſe effectually, had not his adverſary's indignation been repreſſed by the ſuggeſtions of the lieutenant, who deſired his friend in a whiſper to be eaſy, for he would take care to have the attorney toſſed in a blanket for his preſumption. This propoſal, which he received with great approbation, pacified him in a moment; he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and his features relaxed into a grim ſmile.

Hatchway diſappeared, and Ravine proceeded with great fluency of abuſe, until he was interrupted by the arrival of Pipes, who without any expoſtulation, led him out by the hand, and conducted him to the yard, where he was put into a carpet, and in a twinkling ſent into the air by the ſtrength and dexterity of five ſtout operators, whom the lieutenant had ſelected from the number of domeſticks for that ſingular ſpell of duty.

In vain did the aſtoniſhed vaulter beg for the love of God and paſſion of Chriſt, that they would take pity upon him, and put an end to his involuntary gambols; they were deaf to his prayers and proteſtations, even when he ſwore in the moſt ſolemn manner, that if they would ceaſe tormenting him, he would forget and forgive what was paſſed, and depart in peace to his own habitation; and continued the game till they were fatigued with the exerciſe.

Ravine being diſmiſſed in a moſt melancholy plight, brought an action of aſſault and battery againſt

againſt the commodore, and ſubpœna'd all the ſervants as evidences in the cauſe; but as none of them had ſeen what happened, he did not find his account in the proſecution, though he himſelf examined all the witneſſes, and among other queſtions, aſked whether they had not ſeen him come in like another man? and whether they had ever ſeen any other man in ſuch a condition as that in which he had crawled off? But this laſt interrogation they were not obliged to anſwer, becauſe it had reference to the ſecond diſcipline he had undergone, in which they, and they only were concerned; and no perſon is bound to give teſtimony againſt himſelf.

In ſhort, the attorney was nonſuited, to the ſatisfaction of all who knew him, and found himſelf under the neceſſity of proving that he had received in courſe of poſt, the letter which was declared in court a ſcandalous forgery, in order to prevent an indictment with which he was threatened by the commodore, who little dreamt that the whole affair had been planned and executed by Peregrine and his aſſociates.

The next enterprize in which this triumvirate engaged, was a ſcheme to frighten Trunnion with an apparition, which they prepared and exhibited in this manner. To the hide of a large ox, Pipes fitted a leathern vizor of a moſt terrible appearance, ſtretched on the jaws of a ſhark which he had brought from ſea, and accommodated with a couple of broad glaſſes inſtead of eyes. On the inſide of theſe he placed two ruſh lights, and with a compoſition of ſulphur and ſaltpetre, made a pretty large fuſe, which he fixed between two rows of the teeth. This equipage being finiſhed, he, one dark night choſen for the

purpoſe, put it on, and following the commodore into a long paſſage in which he was preceded by Perry with a light in his hand, kindled his fire-work with a match, and began to bellow like a bull. The boy, as it was concerted, looking behind him, ſcreamed aloud, and dropped the light, which was extinguiſhed in the fall: when Trunnion alarmed at his nephew's conſternation, exclaimed, "Zounds! what's the matter?" And turning about to ſee the cauſe of his diſmay, beheld a hideous phantom vomiting blue flame, which aggravated the horrors of its aſpect. He was inſtantly ſeized with an agony of fear, which diveſted him of his reaſon; nevertheleſs, he, as it were mechanically, raiſed his truſty ſupporter in his own defence, and the apparition advancing towards him, aimed it at this dreadful annoyance with ſuch a convulſive exertion of ſtrength, that had not the blow chanced to light upon one of the horns, Mr. Pipes would have had no cauſe to value himſelf upon his invention. Miſapplied as it was, he did not fail to ſtagger at the ſhock, and dreading another ſuch ſalutation, cloſed with the commodore, and having tripped up his heels, retreated with great expedition.

It was then that Peregrine, pretending to recollect himſelf a little, ran with all the marks of diſturbance and affright, and called up the ſervants to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, whom they found in a cold ſweat upon the floor, his features betokening horror and confuſion. Hatchway raiſed him up, and having comforted him with a cup of Nantz, began to inquire into the cauſe of his diſorder: but he could not extract one word of anſwer from his friend, who, after a conſiderable pauſe, during which he ſeemed to be

be wrapped up in profound contemplation, pronounced aloud, "By the Lord! Jack, you may ſay what you wool; but I'll be damned if it was not Davy Jones himſelf: I know him by his ſaucer-eyes, his three rows of teeth, his horns and tail, and the blue ſmoke that came out of his noſtrils. What does the black-guard, hell's baby want with me? I'm ſure I never committed murder, except in the way of my profeſſion, nor wronged any man whatſomever ſince I firſt went to ſea." This ſame Davy Jones, according to the mythology of ſailors, is the fiend that preſides over all the evil ſpirits of the deep, and is often ſeen in various ſhapes, perching among the rigging on the eve of hurricanes, ſhipwrecks, and other diſaſters, to which a ſea-faring life is expoſed; *warning the devoted wretch of death and woe.* No wonder then that Trunnion was diſturbed by a ſuppoſed viſit of this dæmon, which, in his opinion, foreboded ſome dreadful calamity.

CHAP. XIV.

He is alſo by their device engaged in an adventure with the exciſeman, who does not find his account in his own drollery.

HOwſoever prepoſterous and unaccountable that paſſion may be, which prompts perſons, otherwiſe generous and ſympathiſing, to afflict and perplex their fellow-creatures, certain it is our confederates entertained ſuch a large proportion of it, that not ſatisfied with the

pranks they had already played, they ſtill perſecuted the commodore without ceaſing. In the courſe of his own hiſtory, the particulars of which he delighted to recount, he had often rehearſed an adventure of deer-ſtealing, in which (during the unthinking impetuoſity of his youth) he had been unfortunately concerned. Far from ſucceeding in that atchievement, he and his aſſociates had (it ſeems) been made priſoners, after an obſtinate engagement with the keepers, and carried before a neighbouring juſtice of the peace, who uſed Trunnion with great indignity, and with his companions committed him to jail.

His own relations, and in particular an uncle on whom he chiefly depended, treated him during his confinement with great rigour and inhumanity, and abſolutely refuſed to interpoſe his influence in his behalf, unleſs he would ſign a writing, obliging himſelf to go to ſea within thirty days after his releaſe, under the penalty of being proceeded againſt as a felon. The alternative was either to undergo this voluntary exile, or remain in priſon diſowned and deſerted by every body, and after all ſuffer an ignominious trial, that might end in a ſentence of tranſportation for life. He therefore, without much heſitation, embraced the propoſal of his kinſman, and (as he obſerved) was in leſs than a month after his diſcharge turned adrift to the mercy of the wind and waves.

Since that period he had never maintained any correſpondence with his relations, all of whom had concurred in ſending him off; nor would he ever pay the leaſt regard to the humiliations and ſupplications of ſome among them, who had proſtrated themſelves before him, on the advance-

ment

ment of his fortune: but he retained a moſt inveterate reſentment againſt his uncle, who was ſtill in being, tho' extremely old and infirm, and frequently mentioned his name with all the bitterneſs of revenge.

Perry being perfectly well acquainted with the particulars of this ſtory, which he had heard ſo often repeated, propoſed to Hatchway, that a perſon ſhould be hired to introduce himſelf to the commodore, with a ſuppoſititious letter of recommendation from this deteſted kinſman; an impoſition that, in all likelihood, would afford abundance of diverſion.

The lieutenant reliſhed the ſcheme, and young Pickle having compoſed an epiſtle for the occaſion, the exciſeman of the pariſh, a fellow of great impudence and ſome humour, in whom Hatchway could confide, undertook to tranſcribe and deliver it with his own hand, and alſo perſonate the man in whoſe favour it was feigned to be writ. He, accordingly, one morning arrived on horſeback at the garriſon, two hours at leaſt before Trunnion uſed to get up, and gave Pipes, who admitted him, to underſtand, that he had a letter for his maſter, which he was ordered to deliver to none but the commodore himſelf. This meſſage was no ſooner communicated, than the indignant chief (who had been waked for the purpoſe) began to curſe the meſſenger for breaking his reſt, and ſwore he would not budge 'till his uſual time of turning out. This reſolution being conveyed to the ſtranger, he deſired the carrier to go back and tell him, he had ſuch joyful tidings to impart, that he was ſure the commodore would think himſelf amply rewarded

for his trouble, even if he had been raiſed from the grave to receive them.

This aſſurance, flattering as it was, would not have been powerful enough to perſuade him, had it not been aſſiſted with the exhortations of his ſpouſe, which never failed to influence his conduct. He therefore crept out of bed, tho' not without great repugnance, and wrapping himſelf in his morning gown, was ſupported down ſtairs, rubbing his eye, yawning fearfully, and grumbling all the way. As ſoon as he popt his head into the parlour, the ſuppoſed ſtranger made divers aukward bows, and with a grinning aſpect accoſted him in theſe words: "Your moſt humble ſervant, moſt noble commodore! I hope you are in good health; you look pure and hearty; and if it was not for that misfortune of your eye, one would not deſire to ſee a more pleaſant countenance in a ſummer's day. Sure as I am a living ſoul, one would take you to be on this ſide of threeſcore. Laud help us! I ſhould have known you to be a Trunnion if I had met with you in the midſt of Saliſbury plain, as the ſaying is." The commodore, who was not at all in the humour of reliſhing ſuch an impertinent preamble, interrupted him in this place, ſaying, with a peeviſh accent, "Pſhaw! pſhaw! brother, there's no occaſion to bowſs out ſo much unneceſſary gum; if you can't bring your diſcourſe to bear on the right ſubject, you had much better clap a ſtopper on your tongue, and bring yourſelf up, d'ye ſee: I was told you had ſomething to deliver." "Deliver! (cried the waggiſh impoſtor) odds heart! I have got ſomething for you that will make your very intrails rejoice within your body. Here's a letter from a dear and worthy friend of yours. Take,

Take, read it, and be happy. Bleſſings on his old heart! one would think he had renewed his age, like the eagles." Trunnion's expectation being thus raiſed, he called for his ſpectacles, adjuſted them to his eye, took the letter, and being curious to know the ſubſcription, no ſooner perceived his uncle's name, than he ſtarted back, his lip quivered, and he began to ſhake in every limb with reſentment and ſurprize: nevertheleſs, eager to know the ſubject of an epiſtle from a perſon who had never before troubled him with any ſort of addreſs, he endeavoured to recollect himſelf, and peruſed the contents, which were theſe:

"Loving Nephew,

I Doubt not but you will be rejoiced to hear of my welfare; and well you may, conſidering what a kind uncle I have been to you in the days of your youth, and how little you deſerved any ſuch thing, for you was always a graceleſs young man, given to wicked courſes and bad company, whereby you would have come to a ſhameful end, had it not been for my care in ſending you out of miſchief's way. But this is not the cauſe of my preſent writing. The bearer, Mr. Timothy Trickle, is a diſtant relation of yours, being the ſon of the couſin of your aunt Margery, and is not over and above well as to worldly matters. He thinks of going to London, to ſee for ſome poſt in the exciſe or cuſtoms, if ſo be that you will recommend him to ſome great man of your acquaintance, and give him a ſmall matter to keep him till he is provided. I doubt not, nephew, but you will be glad to ſerve him, if it was no

more but for the reſpect you bear to me, who am,

Loving Nephew,
Your affectionate Uncle,
and Servant to command,
TOBIAH TRUNNION."

It would be a difficult taſk for the inimitable Hogarth himſelf to exhibit the ludicrous expreſſion of the commodore's countenance, while he read this letter. It was not a ſtare of aſtoniſhment, a convulſion of rage, or a ghaſtly grin of revenge, but an aſſociation of all three, that took poſſeſſion of his features. At length he hawked up, with incredible ſtraining, the interjection Ah! that ſeemed to have ſtuck ſome time in his windpipe, and thus gave vent to his indignation: "Have I come along ſide of you at laſt, you old ſtinking curmudgeon! you lie, you louſy hulk, ye lie! you did all in your power to founder me when I was a ſtripling; and as for being graceleſs, and wicked, and keeping bad company, you tell a damned lie again, you thief; there was not a more peaceable lad in the county, and I kept no bad company but your own, d'ye ſee. Therefore, you Trickle, or what's your name, tell the old raſcal that ſent you hither, that I ſpit in his face, and call him *Horſe*; that I tear his letter into rags, ſo; and that I trample upon it as I would upon his own villainous carcaſe, d'ye ſee." So ſaying, he danced in a ſort of frenzy upon the fragments of the paper, which he had ſcattered about the room, to the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of the triumvirate, who beheld the ſcene.

The

The exciſeman having got between him and the door, which was left open for his eſcape, in caſe of neceſſity, affected great confuſion and ſurprize at his behaviour, ſaying, with an air of mortification, "Lord be merciful unto me! is this the way you treat your own relations, and the recommendation of your beſt friend? Surely all gratitude and virtue has left this ſinful world! What will couſin Tim, and Dick, and Tom, and good mother Pipkin, and her daughters, couſin Sue, and Prue, and Peg, with all the reſt of our kinsfolks ſay, when they hear of this unconſcionable reception that I have met with? Conſider, Sir, that ingratitude is worſe than the ſin of witchcraft, as the apoſtle wiſely obſerves; and do not ſend me away with ſuch unchriſtian uſage, which will lay a heavy load of guilt upon your poor miſerable ſoul." "What you are on the cruize for a poſt, brother Trickle, an't ye? (ſaid Trunnion, interrupting him) we ſhall find a poſt for you in a trice, my boy. Here, Pipes, take this ſaucy ſon of a bitch, belay him to the whipping-poſt in the yard. I'll teach you to rowce me in the morning with ſuch impertinent meſſages." Pipes, who wanted to carry the joke farther than the exciſeman dreamt of, laid hold of him in a twinkling, and executed the orders of his commander, notwithſtanding all his nods, winking, and ſignificant geſtures, which the boatſwain's mate would by no means underſtand: ſo that he began to repent of the part he acted in this performance, which was like to end ſo tragically, and ſtood faſtened to the ſtake, in a very diſagreeable ſtate of ſuſpence; caſting many a rueful look over his left ſhoulder, (while Pipes was abſent in queſt of a cat

a cat and nine tails) in expectation of being relieved by the interpoſition of the lieutenant, who did not, however, appear. Tom returning with the inſtrument of correction, undreſſed the delinquent in a trice, and whiſpering in his ear, that he was very ſorry for being employed in ſuch an office, but durſt not for his ſoul diſobey the orders of his commander, flouriſhed the ſcourge about his head, and with admirable dexterity made ſuch a ſmarting application to the offender's back and ſhoulders, that the diſtracted gauger performed ſundry new cuts with his feet, and bellowed hideouſly with pain, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators. At length, when he was almoſt ſtead from his rump to the nape of his neck, Hatchway, who had purpoſely abſented himſelf hitherto, appeared in the yard, and interpoſing in his behalf, prevailed upon Trunnion to call off the executioner, and ordered the malefactor to be releaſed.

The exciſeman, mad with the cataſtrophe he had undergone, threatened to be revenged upon his employers, by making a candid confeſſion of the whole plot; but the lieutenant giving him to underſtand, that in ſo doing he would bring upon himſelf a proſecution for fraud, forgery and impoſture, he was fain to put up with his loſs, and ſneaked out of the gariſon, attended with a volley of curſes diſcharged upon him by the commodore, who was exceedingly irritated by the diſturbance and diſappointment he had undergone.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

The commodore detects the machinations of the conſpirators, and hires a tutor for Peregrine, *whom he ſettles at* Winchester *ſchool.*

THIS was not the laſt affliction he ſuffered from the unwearied endeavours and inexhauſted invention of his tormentors, who harraſſed him with ſuch a variety of miſchievous pranks, that he began to think all the devils in hell had conſpired againſt his peace; and accordingly became very ſerious and contemplative on the ſubject.

In the courſe of his meditations, when he recollected and compared the circumſtances of every mortification to which he had been lately expoſed, he could not help ſuſpecting that ſome of them muſt have been contrived to vex him; and as he was not ignorant of his lieutenant's diſpoſition, nor unacquainted with the talents of Peregrine, he reſolved to obſerve them both for the future with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. This reſolution, aided by the incautious conduct of the conſpirators, whom, by this time, ſucceſs had rendered heedleſs and indiſcreet, was attended with the deſired effect. He in a little time detected Perry in a new plot, and by dint of a little chaſtiſement, and a great many threats, extorted from him a confeſſion of all the contrivances in which he had been concerned. The commodore was thunderſtruck at the diſcovery, and ſo much incenſed againſt Hatchway for the part he had acted in the whole, that he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould demand ſatis-

ſatisfaction with ſword and piſtol, or diſmiſs him from the gariſon, and renounce all friendſhip with him at once. But he had been ſo long accuſtomed to Jack's company, that he could not live without him; and upon more cool reflection, perceiving that what he had done was rather the effect of wantonneſs than malice, which he himſelf would have laughed to ſee take place upon any other perſon, he determined to devour his chagrin, and extend his forgiveneſs even to Pipes, whom in the firſt ſally of his paſſion he had looked upon in a more criminal light than that of a ſimple mutineer. This determination was ſeconded by another, which he thought abſolutely neceſſary for his own repoſe, and in which his own intereſt and that of his nephew concurred.

Peregrine, who was now turned of twelve, had made ſuch advances under the inſtruction of Jennings, that he often diſputed upon grammar, and was ſometimes thought to have the better in his conteſts with the pariſh-prieſt, who, notwithſtanding this acknowledged ſuperiority of his antagoniſt, did great juſtice to his genius, which he aſſured Mr. Trunnion would be loſt for want of cultivation, if the boy was not immediately ſent to proſecute his ſtudies at ſome proper ſeminary of learning.

This maxim had been more than once inculcated upon the commodore by Mrs. Trunnion, who, over and above the deference ſhe paid to the parſon's opinion, had a reaſon of her own for wiſhing to ſee the houſe clear of Peregrine, at whoſe prying diſpoſition ſhe began to be very uneaſy. Induced by theſe motives, which were joined by the ſolicitation of the youth himſelf, who

who ardently longed to ſee a little more of the world, his uncle determined to ſend him forthwith to Wincheſter, under the immediate care and inſpection of a governor, to whom he allowed a very handſome appointment for that purpoſe. This gentleman, whoſe name was Mr. Jacob Jolter, had been ſchoolfellow with the parſon of the pariſh, who recommended him to Mrs. Trunnion as a perſon of great worth and learning, in every reſpect qualified for the office of a tutor. He likewiſe added, by way of eulogium, that he was a man of exemplary piety, and particularly zealous for the honour of the church of which he was a member, having been many years in holy orders, though he did not then exerciſe any function of the prieſthood. Indeed, Mr. Jolter's zeal was ſo exceedingly fervent, as, on ſome occaſions, to get the better of his diſcretion: for, being an high churchman, and of conſequence a malecontent, his reſentment was habituated into an inſurmountable prejudice againſt the preſent diſpoſition of affairs, which, by confounding the nation with the miniſtry, ſometimes led him into erroneous, not to ſay abſurd calculations; otherwiſe, a man of good morals, well verſed in mathematics and ſchool-divinity, ſtudies which had not at all contributed to ſweeten and unbend the natural ſourneſs and ſeverity of his complexion.

This gentleman being deſtined to the charge of ſuperintending Perry's education, every thing was prepared for their departure; and Tom Pipes, in conſequence of his own petition, put into livery, and appointed footman to the young ſquire. But, before they ſet out, the commodore paid the compliment of communicating his

deſign

deſign to Mr. Pickle, who approved of the plan, though he durſt not venture to ſee the boy; ſo much was he intimidated by the remonſtrances of his wife, whoſe averſion to her firſt-born became every day more inveterate and unaccountable. This unnatural caprice ſeemed to be ſupported by a conſideration which (one would imagine) might have rather vanquiſhed her diſguſt. Her ſecond ſon Gam, who was now in the fourth year of his age, had been ricketty from the cradle, and as remarkably unpromiſing in appearance as Perry was agreeable in his perſon. As the deformity increaſed, the mother's fondneſs was augmented, and the virulence of her hate againſt the other ſon ſeemed to prevail in the ſame proportion.

Far from allowing Perry to enjoy the common privileges of a child, ſhe would not ſuffer him to approach his father's houſe, expreſſed uneaſineſs whenever his name happened to be mentioned, ſickened at his praiſe, and in all reſpects behaved like a moſt rancorous ſtep mother. Though ſhe no longer retained that ridiculous notion of his being an impoſtor, ſhe ſtill continued to abhor him, as if ſhe really believed him to be ſuch; and when any perſon deſired to know the cauſe of her ſurpriſing diſlike, ſhe always loſt her temper, and peeviſhly replied, that ſhe had reaſons of her own, which ſhe was not obliged to declare: nay, ſo much was ſhe infected by this vicious partiality, that ſhe broke off all commerce with her ſiſter-in-law and the commodore, becauſe they favoured the poor child with their countenance and protection.

Her malice, however, was fruſtrated by the love and generoſity of Trunnion, who having adopted

adopted him as his own ſon, equipped him accordingly, and carried him and his governor in his own coach to the place of deſtination, where they were ſettled on a very genteel footing, and every thing regulated according to their deſires.

Mrs. Trunnion behaved with great decency at the departure of her nephew, to whom, with a great many pious advices, and injunctions to behave with ſubmiſſion and reverence towards his tutor, ſhe preſented a diamond ring of ſmall value, and a gold medal, as tokens of her affection and eſteem. As for the lieutenant he accompanied them in the coach; and ſuch was the friendſhip he had contracted for Perry, that when the commodore propoſed to return, after having accompliſhed the intent of his journey, Jack abſolutely refuſed to attend him, and ſignified his reſolution to ſtay where he was.

Trunnion was the more ſtartled at this declaration, as Hatchway was become ſo neceſſary to him in almoſt all the purpoſes of his life, that he foreſaw he ſhould not be able to exiſt without his company. Not a little affected with this conſideration, he turned his eye ruefully upon the lieutenant, ſaying in a piteous tone, "What! leave me at laſt, Jack, after we have weathered ſo many hard gales together? D—n my limbs! I thought you had been more of an honeſt heart: I looked upon you as my foremaſt, and Tom Pipes as my mizen; now he is carried away, if ſo be as you go too, my ſtanding rigging being decayed, d'ye ſee, the firſt ſquall will bring me by the board. D—n ye, if in caſe I have given offence, can't ye ſpeak above board? and I ſhall make you amends."

Jack

Jack being aſhamed to own the true ſituation of his thoughts, after ſome heſitation, anſwered with perplexity and incoherence, "No, damme! that an't the caſe neither: to be ſure you always uſed me in an officer-like manner, that I muſt own, to give the devil his due, as the ſaying is; but for all that, this here is the caſe, I have ſome thoughts of going to ſchool myſelf to learn your Latin lingo; for, as the ſaying is, *Be.ter late mend than never*. And I am informed as how one can get more for the money here than any where elſe."

In vain did Trunnion endeavour to convince him of the folly of going to ſchool at his years, by repreſenting that the boys would make game of him, and that he would become a laughing-ſtock to all the world; he perſiſted in his reſolution to ſtay, and the commodore was fain to have recourſe to the mediation of Pipes and Perry, who employed their influence with Jack, and at laſt prevailed upon him to return to the garriſon, after Trunnion had promiſed he ſhould be at liberty to viſit them once a month. This ſtipulation being ſettled, he and his friend took leave of the pupil, governor and attendant, and next morning ſet out for their habitation, which they reached in ſafety that ſame night.

Such was Hatchway's reluctance to leave Peregrine, that he is ſaid, for the firſt time in his life, to have looked miſty at parting: certain I am, that on the road homewards, after a long pauſe of ſilence, which the commodore never dreamt of interrupting, he exclaimed all of a ſudden, "I'll be damned if the dog han't given me ſome ſtuff to make me love him." Indeed there was ſomething congenial in the diſpoſition

of theſe two friends, which never failed to manifeſt itſelf in the ſequel, howſoever different their education, circumſtances and connections happened to be.

CHAP. XVI.

Peregrine *diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his ſchool-fellows, expoſes his tutor, and attracts the particular notice of the maſter.*

THUS left to the proſecution of his ſtudies, Peregrine was in a little time a diſtinguiſhed character, not only for his acuteneſs of apprehenſion, but alſo for that miſchievous fertility of fancy, of which we have already given ſuch pregnant examples. But as there was a great number of ſuch luminaries in this new ſphere to which he belonged, his talents were not ſo conſpicuous, while they ſhone in his ſingle capacity, as they afterwards appeared, when they concentrated and reflected the rays of the whole conſtellation.

At firſt he confined himſelf to piddling game, exerciſing his genius upon his own tutor, who attracted his attention, by endeavouring to ſeaſon his mind with certain political maxims, the fallacy of which he had diſcernment enough to perceive. Scarce a day paſſed, in which he did not find means to render Mr. Jolter the object of ridicule; his violent prejudices, ludicrous vanity, awkward ſolemnity and ignorance of mankind, afforded continual food for the raillery, petulance

lance and ſatire of his pupil, who never neglected an opportunity of laughing, and making others laugh at his expence.

Sometimes in their parties, by mixing brandy in his wine, he decoyed this pedagogue into a debauch, during which his caution forſook him, and he expoſed himſelf to the cenſure of the company. Sometimes when the converſation turned upon intricate ſubjects, he practiſed upon him the ſocratic method of confutation, and, under pretence of being informed by an artful train of puzzling queſtions, inſenſibly betrayed him into ſelf-contradiction.

All the remains of authority which he had hitherto preſerved over Peregrine ſoon vaniſhed; ſo that, for the future, no ſort of ceremony ſubſiſted between them, and all Mr. Jolter's precepts were conveyed in hints of friendly advice, which the other might either follow or neglect at his own pleaſure. No wonder then that Peregrine gave a looſe to his inclinations, and by dint of genius and an enterpriſing temper, made a figure among the younger claſs of heroes in the ſchool.

Before he had been a full year at Wincheſter, he had ſignalized himſelf in ſo many atchievements, in defiance to the laws and regulations of the place, that he was looked upon with admiration, and actually choſen *Dux*, or leader, by a large body of his cotemporaries. It was not long before his fame reached the ears of the maſter, who ſent for Mr. Jolter, communicated to him the informations he had received, and deſired him to check the vivacity of his charge, and redouble his vigilance in time to come, elſe he

he ſhould be obliged to make a public example of his pupil for the benefit of the ſchool.

The governor, conſcious of his own unimportance, was not a little diſconcerted at this injunction, which it was not in his power to fulfil by any compulſive means. He therefore went home in a very penſive mood, and after mature deliberation, reſolved to expoſtulate with Peregrine in the moſt familiar terms, and endeavour to diſſuade him from practices which might affect his character as well as intereſt. He accordingly frankly told him the ſubject of the maſter's diſcourſe, repreſented the diſgrace he might incur by neglecting this warning; and putting him in mind of his own ſituation, hinted the conſequences of the commodore's diſpleaſure, in caſe he ſhould be brought to diſapprove of his conduct. Theſe inſinuations made the greater impreſſion, as they were delivered with many expreſſions of friendſhip and concern. The young gentleman was not ſo raw, but that he could perceive the ſolidity of Mr. Jolter's advice, to which he promiſed to conform, becauſe his pride was intereſted in the affair; and he conſidered his own reformation as the only means of avoiding that infamy which even in idea he could not bear.

His governor finding him ſo reaſonable, profited by theſe moments of reflection, and in order to prevent a relapſe, propoſed that he ſhould engage in ſome delightful ſtudy that would agreeably amuſe his imagination, and gradually detach him from thoſe connexions which had involved him in ſo many troubleſome adventures. For this purpoſe, he, with many rapturous encomiums, recommended the mathematics, as yielding more rational and ſenſible pleaſures to a

youthful fancy than any other ſubject of contemplation; and actually began to read Euclid with him that ſame afternoon.

Peregrine entered upon this branch of learning with all that warmth of application which boys commonly yield on the firſt change of ſtudy; but he had ſcarce advanced beyond the *Pons Aſinorum*, when his ardour abated, the teſt of truth by demonſtration did not elevate him to thoſe tranſports of joy with which his preceptor had regaled his expectation; and before he arrived at the fortieth and ſeventh propoſition, he began to yawn drearily, make abundance of wry faces, and thought himſelf but indifferently paid for his attention, when he ſhared the vaſt diſcovery of Pythagoras, and underſtood that the ſquare of the hypothenuſe was equal to the ſquares of the other two ſides of a right-angled triangle. He was aſhamed, however, to fail in his undertaking, and perſevered with great induſtry, until he had finiſhed the firſt four books, acquired plain trigonometry, with the method of algebraical calculation, and made himſelf well acquainted with the principles of ſurveying. But no conſideration could prevail upon him to extend his enquiries farther in this ſcience; and he returned with double reliſh to his former avocations, like a ſtream which being dammed, accumulates more force, and burſting o'er its mounds, ruſhes down with double impetuoſity.

Mr. Jolter ſaw with aſtoniſhment and chagrin, but could not reſiſt the torrent. His behaviour was now no other than a ſeries of licence and effrontery; prank ſucceeded prank, and outrage followed outrage with ſurpriſing velocity. Complaints were every day preferred againſt him; in vain

vain were admonitions beſtowed by the governor in private, and menaces diſcharged by the maſters in public; he diſregarded the firſt, deſpiſed the latter, diveſted himſelf of all manner of reſtraint, and proceeded in his career to ſuch a pitch of audacity, that a conſultation was held upon the ſubject, in which it was determined that this untoward ſpirit ſhould be humbled by a ſevere and ignominious flogging for the very next offence he ſhould commit. In the mean time Mr. Jolter was deſired to write in the maſter's name to the commodore, requeſting him to remove Tom Pipes from the perſon of his nephew, the ſaid Pipes being a principal actor and abetter in all his malverſations; and to put a ſtop to the monthly viſitations of the mutilated lieutenant, who had never once failed to uſe his permiſſion, but came punctual to a day, always fraught with ſome new invention. Indeed, by this time, Mr. Hatchway was as well known, and much better beloved by every boy in the ſchool than the maſter who inſtructed him, and always received by a number of ſcholars, who uſed to attend Peregrine when he went forth to meet his friend, and conduct him to his lodging with public teſtimonies of joy and applauſe.

As for Tom Pipes, he was not ſo properly the attendant of Peregrine, as maſter of the revels to the whole ſchool. He mingled in all their parties, and ſuperintended the diverſions, deciding between boy and boy, as if he acted by commiſſion under the great ſeal. He regulated their motions by his whiſtle, inſtructed the young boys in the games of huſtle-cap, leap-frog, and chuck-farthing; imparted to thoſe of a more advanced age the ſciences of cribbage and all-fours, together

with the method of ſtorming the caſtle, acting the comedy of prince Arthur, and other pantomimes, as they are commonly exhibited at ſea; and inſtructed the ſeniors who were diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of bloods, in cudgel playing, dancing the St. Giles's hornpipe, drinking flip, and ſmoaking tobacco. Theſe qualifications had rendered him ſo neceſſary and acceptable to the ſcholars, that, excluſive of Perry's concern in the affair, his diſmiſſion, in all probability, would have produced ſome dangerous convulſion in the community. Jolter, therefore, knowing his importance, informed his pupil of the directions he had received, and very candidly aſked how he ſhould demean himſelf in the execution; for he durſt not write to the commodore without this previous notice, fearing that the young gentleman, as ſoon as he ſhould get an inkling of the affair, would follow the example, and make his uncle acquainted with certain anecdotes, which it was the governor's intereſt to keep concealed. Peregrine was of opinion that he ſhould ſpare himſelf the trouble of conveying any complaints to the commodore; and if queſtioned by the maſter, aſſure him he had complied with his deſire; at the ſame time he promiſed faithfully to conduct himſelf with ſuch circumſpection for the future, that the maſters ſhould have no temptation to revive the inquiry. But the reſolution attending this extorted promiſe was too frail to laſt, and in leſs than a fortnight our young hero found himſelf intangled in an adventure from which he was not extricated with his uſual good fortune.

CHAP. XVII.

He is concerned in a dangerous adventure with a certain gardener; ſublimes his ideas, commences gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet.

HE and ſome of his companions one day entered a garden in the ſuburbs, and having indulged their appetites, deſired to know what ſatisfaction they muſt make for the fruit they had pulled. The gardener demanded what (in their opinion) was an exorbitant price, and they with many opprobrious terms refuſed to pay it. The peaſant being ſurly and intractable, inſiſted upon his right; neither was he deficient or ſparing in the eloquence of vulgar abuſe. His gueſts attempted to retreat; a ſcuffle enſued, in which Peregrine loſt his cap, and the gardener being in danger from the number of his foes, called to his wife to let looſe the dog, who inſtantly flew to his maſter's aſſiſtance; and after having tore the leg of one, and the ſhoulder of another, put the whole body of ſcholars to flight. Enraged at the indignity which had been offered them, they ſolicited a reinforcement of their friends, and with Tom Pipes at their head, marched back to the field of battle. Their adverſary ſeeing them approach, called his apprentice, who worked at the other end of the ground, to his aſſiſtance, armed him with a mattock, while he himſelf wielded an hoe, bolted his door on the inſide, and flank-

ed with his man and maſtiff, waited the attack without flinching. He had not remained three minutes in this poſture of defence, when Pipes, who acted as the enemy's forlorn hope, advanced to the gate with great intrepidity, and clapping his foot to the door, which was none of the ſtouteſt, with the execution and diſpatch of a petard, ſplit it into a thouſand pieces. This ſudden execution had an immediate effect upon the 'prentice, who retreated with great precipitation, and eſcaped at a poſtern. But the maſter placed himſelf like another Hercules in the breach; and when Pipes, brandiſhing his cudgel, ſtepped forward to engage him, levelled his weapon with ſuch force and dexterity at his head, that had the ſkull been made of penetrable ſtuff, the iron edge muſt have cleft his pate in twain. Caſemated as he was, the inſtrument cut ſheer even to the bone, on which it ſtruck with ſuch amazing violence, that ſparks of real fire were produced by the colliſion. And let not the incredulous reader pretend to doubt the truth of this phænomenon, until he ſhall have firſt peruſed the ingenious Peter Kolben's Natural Hiſtory of the Cape of Good Hope, where the inhabitants commonly uſe to ſtrike fire with the ſhin-bones of lions which have been killed in that part of Africk.

Pipes, though a little diſconcerted, far from being diſabled by the blow, in a trice retorted the compliment with his truncheon, which, had not his antagoniſt expeditiouſly ſlipped his head aſide, would have laid him breathleſs acroſs his own threſhold; but, happily for him, he received the ſalutation upon his right ſhoulder, which craſhed beneath the ſtroke, and the hoe dropped inſtantly

inſtantly from his tingling hand. Tom perceiving, and being unwilling to forego the advantage he had gained, darted his head into the boſom of this ſon of earth, and overturned him on the plain, being himſelf that inſtant aſſaulted by the maſtiff, who faſtened upon the outſide of his thigh. Feeling himſelf incommoded by this aſſailant in his rear, he quitted the proſtrate gardener to the reſentment of his aſſociates, who poured upon him in ſhoals, and turning about laid hold with both his hands of this ferocious animal's throat, which he ſqueezed with ſuch incredible force and perſeverance, that the creature quitted his hold; his tongue lolled out of his jaws, the blood ſtarted from his eyes, and he ſwung a lifeleſs trunk between the hands of his vanquiſher.

It was well for his maſter that he did not longer exiſt! for by this time he was overwhelmed by ſuch a multitude of foes, that his whole body ſcarce afforded points of contact to all the fiſts that drummed upon it, conſequently, to uſe a vulgar phraſe, his wind was almoſt knocked out, before Pipes had leiſure to interpoſe in his behalf, and perſuade his offenders to deſiſt, by repreſenting that the wife had gone to alarm the neighbourhood, and that in all probability, they would be intercepted in their return. They accordingly liſtened to his remonſtrances, and marched homewards in triumph, leaving the gardener in the embraces of his mother earth, from which he had not power to move when he was found by his diſconſolate helpmate and ſome friends whom ſhe had aſſembled for his aſſiſtance. Among theſe was a blackſmith and farrier, who took cognizance of his carcaſe, every limb of

which having examined, he declared there was no bone broke, and taking out his fleam, blooded him plentifully as he lay. He was then conveyed to his bed, from which he was not able to ſtir during a whole month. His family coming upon the pariſh, a formal complaint was made to the maſter of the ſchool, and Peregrine repreſented as the ring-leader of thoſe who committed this barbarous aſſault. An enquiry was immediately ſet on foot, and the articles of impeachment being fully proved, our hero was ſentenced to be ſeverely chaſtiſed in the face of the whole ſchool. This was a diſgrace the thoughts of which his proud heart could not brook. He reſolved to make his elopement rather than undergo the puniſhment to which he was doomed; and having ſignified his ſentiments to his confederates, they promiſed, one and all, to ſtand by him, and either ſcreen him from chaſtiſement, or ſhare his fate.

Confiding in this friendly proteſtation, he appeared unconcerned on the day that was appointed for his puniſhment; and when he was called to his deſtiny, advanced towards the ſcene, attended by the greateſt part of the ſcholars, who intimated their determination to the maſter, and propoſed that Peregrine ſhould be forgiven. The ſuperior behaved with that dignity of demeanor which became his place, repreſented the folly and preſumption of their demand, reprehended them for their audacious proceeding, and ordered every boy to his reſpective ſtation. They obeyed his command, and our unfortunate hero was publickly horſed, *in terrorem* of all whom it might concern.

This

This diſgrace had a very ſenſible effect upon the mind of Peregrine, who having by this time paſſed the fourteenth year of his age, began to adopt the pride and ſentiments of a man. Thus diſhonourably ſtigmatized, he was aſhamed to appear in public as uſual; he was incenſed againſt his companions for their infidelity and irreſolution, and plunged into a profound reverie that laſted ſeveral weeks, during which he ſhook off his boyiſh connections, and fixed his view upon objects which he thought more worthy of his attention.

In the courſe of his gymnaſtic exerciſes, at which he was very expert, he contracted intimacies with ſeveral youths who were greatly his ſuperiors in point of age, and who, pleaſed with his aſpiring genius and addreſs, introduced him into parties of gallantry, which ſtrongly captivated his inclination. He was by nature particularly adapted for ſucceeding in adventures of this kind; over and above a moſt engaging perſon that improved with his years, he poſſeſſed a dignified aſſurance, an agreeable ferocity which inhanced the conqueſt of the fair who had the good fortune to enſlave him, unlimited generoſity, and a fund of humour which never failed to pleaſe. Nor was he deficient in the more ſolid accompliſhments of youth; he had profited in his ſtudies beyond expectation, and beſides that ſenſibility of diſcernment which is the foundation of taſte, and in conſequence of which he diſtinguiſhed and enjoyed the beauties of the Claſſics, he had already given ſeveral ſpecimens of a very promiſing poetic talent.

With this complexion and theſe qualifications, no wonder that our hero attracted the notice and

affections of the young Delias in town, whoſe hearts had juſt begun to flutter for they knew not what. Inquiries were made concerning his condition; and no ſooner were his expectations known, than he was invited and careſſed by all the parents, while their daughters vyed with each other in treating him with particular complacency. He inſpired love and emulation wherever he appeared; envy and jealous rage followed of courſe; ſo that he became a very deſirable, though a very dangerous acquaintance. His moderation was not equal to his ſucceſs; his vanity took the lead of his paſſions, diſſipating his attention, which might otherwiſe have fixed him to one object; and he was poſſeſſed with the rage of increaſing the number of his conqueſts. With this view he frequented public walks, concerts and aſſemblies, became remarkably rich and faſhionable in his cloaths, gave entertainments to the ladies, and was in the utmoſt hazard of turning out a moſt egregious coxcomb.

While his character thus wavered between the ridicule of ſome, and the regard of others, an accident happened, which by contracting his view to one object, detached him from thoſe vain purſuits that would in time have plunged him into an abyſs of folly and contempt. Being one evening at the ball which is always given to the ladies at the time of the races, the perſon who acted as maſter of the ceremonies, knowing how fond Mr. Pickle was of every opportunity to diſplay himſelf, came up and told him, that there was a fine young creature at the other end of the room, who ſeemed to have a great inclination to dance a minuet, but wanting a partner, the gentleman who attended her being in boots.

Pere-

Peregrine's vanity being aroused at this intimation, he went up to reconnoitre the young lady, and was struck with admiration at her beauty. She seemed to be of his own age, was tall, and, tho' slender, exquisitely shaped; her hair was auburn, and in such plenty, that the barbarity of dress had not been able to prevent it from shading both sides of her forehead, which was so high and polished; the contour of her face was oval, her nose very little raised into the aquiline form, that contributed to the spirit and dignity of her aspect; her mouth was small, her lips plump, juicy and delicious, her teeth regular and white as driven snow, her complexion incredibly delicate and glowing with health, and her full blue eyes beamed forth vivacity and love: her mien was at the same time commanding and engaging, her address perfectly genteel, and her whole appearance so captivating, that our young Adonis looked, and was overcome.

He no sooner recollected himself from his astonishment, than he advanced to her with a graceful air of respect, and begged she would do him the honour to walk a minuet with him. She seemed particularly pleased with his application, and very frankly complied with his request. This pair was too remarkable to escape the particular notice of the company; Mr. Pickle was well known by almost every body in the room, but his partner was altogether a new face, and of consequence underwent the criticism of all the ladies in the assembly; one whispered, "She has a good complexion, but dont't you think she is a little awry?" A second pitied her for her masculine nose; a third observed, that she was awkward for want of seeing company; a fourth di-

ſtinguiſhed ſomething very bold in her countenance; and in ſhort, there was not a beauty in her whole compoſition, which the glaſs of envy did not pervert into a blemiſh.

The men, however, looked upon her with different eyes; among them her appearance produced an univerſal murmur of applauſe; they encircled the ſpace on which ſhe danced, and were enchanted by her graceful motion. While they launched out in the praiſe of her, they expreſſed their diſpleaſure at the good fortune of her partner, whom they damned for a little finical coxcomb, that was too much engroſſed by the contemplation of his own perſon, to diſcern or deſerve the favour of his fate. He did not hear, therefore could not repine at theſe invectives; but while they imagined he indulged his vanity, a much more generous paſſion had taken poſſeſſion of his heart.

Inſtead of that petulance of gaiety for which he had been diſtinguiſhed in his public appearance, he now gave manifeſt ſigns of confuſion and concern; he danced with an anxiety which impeded his performance, and bluſhed to the eyes at every falſe ſtep he made. Though this extraordinary agitation was overlooked by the men, it could not eſcape the obſervation of the ladies, who perceived it with equal ſurprize and reſentment; and when Peregrine led this fair unknown to her ſeat, expreſſed their pique in an affected titter, which broke from every mouth at the ſame inſtant, as if all of them had been informed by the ſame ſpirit.

Peregrine was nettled at this unmannerly mark of diſapprobation, and in order to increaſe their chagrin, endeavoured to enter into particular

converſation with their fair rival. The young lady herſelf, who neither wanted penetration, nor the conſciouſneſs of her own accompliſhments, reſented their behaviour, though ſhe triumphed at the cauſe of it, and gave her partner all the encouragement he could deſire. Her mother, who was preſent, thanked him for his civility in taking ſuch notice of a ſtranger, and he received a compliment of the ſame nature from the young gentleman in boots, who was her own brother.

If he was charmed with her appearance, he was quite raviſhed with her diſcourſe, which was ſenſible, ſpirited and gay. Her frank and ſprightly demeanour excited his own confidence and good humour; and he deſcribed to her the characters of thoſe females who had honoured them with ſuch a ſpiteful mark of diſtinction, in terms ſo replete with humorous ſatire, that ſhe ſeemed to liſten with particular complacency of attention, and diſtinguiſhed every nymph thus ridiculed with ſuch a ſignificant glance, as overwhelmed her with chagrin and mortification. In ſhort, they ſeemed to reliſh each other's converſation, during which our young Damon acquitted himſelf with great ſkill in all the duties of gallantry; he laid hold of proper opportunities to expreſs his admiration of her charms, had recourſe to the ſilent rhetoric of tender looks, breathed divers inſidious ſighs, and attached himſelf wholly to her during the remaining part of the entertainment.

When the company broke up, he attended her to her lodgings, and took leave of her with a ſqueeze of the hand, after having obtained permiſſion to viſit her next morning, and been informed

formed by the mother that her name was Miſs Emilia Gauntlet.

All night long he cloſed not an eye, but amuſed himſelf with plans of pleaſure, which his imagination ſuggeſted, in conſequence of this new acquaintance. He roſe with the lark, adjuſted his hair into an agreeable negligence of curl, and dreſſing himſelf in a genteel grey frock trimmed with ſilver binding, waited with the utmoſt impatience for the hour of ten, which no ſooner ſtruck, then he hied him to the place of appointment, and enquiring for Miſs Gauntlet, was ſhewn into a parlour. Here he had not waited above ten minutes, when Emilia entered in a moſt enchanting undreſs, with all the graces of nature playing about her perſon, and in a moment rivetted the chains of his ſlavery beyond the power of accident to unbind.

Her mother being ſtill abed, and her brother gone to give orders about the chaiſe, in which they propoſed to return that ſame day to their own habitation, he enjoyed her company *tête a tête* a whole hour, during which he declared his love in the moſt paſſionate terms, and begged that he might be admitted into the number of thoſe admirers whom ſhe permitted to viſit and adore her.

She affected to look upon his vows and proteſtations as the ordinary effects of gallantry, and very obligingly aſſured him, that were ſhe to live in that place, ſhe ſhould be glad to ſee him often; but as the ſpot on which ſhe reſided was at a conſiderable diſtance, ſhe could not expect he would go ſo far upon ſuch a trifling occaſion, to take the trouble of providing himſelf with her mama's permiſſion.

To

To this favourable hint he anſwered with all the eagerneſs of the moſt fervid paſſion, that he had uttered nothing but the genuine dictates of his heart; that he deſired nothing ſo much as an opportunity of evincing the ſincerity of his profeſſions; and that though he lived at the extremity of the kingdom, he would find means to lay himſelf at her feet, provided he could viſit her with her mother's conſent, which he aſſured her he would not fail to ſolicit.

She then gave him to underſtand, that her habitation was about ſixteen miles from Wincheſter; in a village which ſhe named, and where (as he could eaſily collect from her diſcourſe) he would be no unwelcome gueſt.

In the midſt of this communication they were joined by Mrs. Gauntlet, who received him with great courteſy, thanking him again for his politeneſs to Emy at the ball, and anticipated his intention, by ſaying that ſhe ſhould be very glad to ſee him at her houſe, if ever his occaſions ſhould call him that way.

CHAP. XVIII.

He inquires into the ſituation of this young lady with whom he is enamoured; elopes from ſchool; is found by the lieutenant, conveyed to Wincheſter, *and ſends a letter with a copy of verſes to his miſtreſs.*

HE was tranſported with pleaſure at this invitation, which he aſſured her he ſhould not neglect; and after a little more converſation on

on general topics, took his leave of the charming Emilia, and her prudent mamma, who had perceived the firſt emotions of Mr. Pickle's paſſion for her daughter, and been at ſome pains to inquire about his family and fortune.

Neither was Peregrine leſs inquiſitive about the ſituation and pedigree of his new miſtreſs, who, he learned, was the only daughter of a field-officer, who died before he had it in his power to make ſuitable proviſion for his children; that the widow lived in a frugal, though decent manner, on her penſion, aſſiſted by the bounty of her relations; that the ſon carried arms as volunteer in the company which his father had commanded; and that Emilia had been educated in London, at the expence of a rich uncle, who was ſeized with the whim of marrying at the age of fifty-five; in conſequence of which, his niece had returned to her mother, without any viſible dependence, except on her own conduct and qualifications.

This account, though it could not diminiſh his affection, nevertheleſs alarmed his pride; for his warm imagination had exaggerated all his own proſpects; and he began to fear, that his paſſion for Emilia might be thought to derogate from the dignity of his ſituation. The ſtruggle between his intereſt and love produced a perplexity which had an evident effect upon his behaviour; he became penſive, ſolitary and peeviſh, avoided all public diverſions, and grew ſo remarkably negligent in his dreſs, that he was ſcarce diſtinguiſhable by his own acquaintance. This contention of thoughts continued ſeveral weeks, at the end of which the charms of Emilia triumphed over every other conſideration.

Having

Having received a ſupply of money from the commodore, who acted towards him with great generoſity, he ordered Pipes to put up ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, in a ſort of knapſack which he could conveniently carry, and thus attended ſet out early one morning on foot for the village where his charmer lived, at which he arrived before two o'clock in the afternoon; having choſen this method of travelling, that his route might not be ſo eaſily diſcovered, as it muſt have been, had he hired horſes, or taken a place in the ſtage coach.

The firſt thing he did was to ſecure a convenient lodging at the inn where he dined; then he ſhifted himſelf, and according to the direction he had received, went to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet in a tranſport of joyous expectation. As he approached the gate his agitation increaſed, he knocked with impatience and concern, the door opened, and he had actually aſked if Mrs. Gauntlet was at home, before he perceived that the portreſs was no other than his dear Emilia. She was not without emotion at the unexpected ſight of her lover, who inſtantly recogniſing his charmer, obeyed the irreſiſtable impulſe of his love, and caught the fair creature in his arms. Nor did ſhe ſeem offended at this forwardneſs of behaviour, which might have diſpleaſed another of a leſs open diſpoſition, or leſs uſed to the freedom of a ſenſible education; but her natural frankneſs had been encouraged and improved by the eaſy and familiar intercourſe in which ſhe had been bred; and therefore, inſtead of reprimanding him with a ſeverity of look, ſhe with great good humour rallied him upon his aſſurance, which ſhe obſerved, was undoubtedly the effect of his own

own conſcious merit, and conducted him into a parlour, where he found her mother, who in very polite terms expreſſed her ſatisfaction at ſeeing him within her houſe.

After tea, Miſs Emy propoſed an evening walk, which they enjoyed through a variety of little copſes and lawns, watered by a moſt romantic ſtream, that quite enchanted the imagination of Peregrine.

It was late before they returned from this agreeable excurſion, and when our lover wiſhed the ladies good night, Mrs. Gauntlet inſiſted upon his ſtaying to ſupper, and treated him with particular demonſtrations of regard and affection. As her oeconomy was not encumbered with an unneceſſary number of domeſtics, her own preſence was often required in different parts of the houſe, ſo that the young gentleman was ſupplied with frequent opportunities of promoting his ſuit, by all the tender oaths and inſinuations that his paſſion could ſuggeſt. He proteſted, her idea had taken ſuch entire poſſeſſion of his heart, that finding himſelf unable to ſupport her abſence one day longer, he had quitted his ſtudies, and left his governor by ſtealth, that he might viſit the object of his adoration, and be bleſſed in her company for a few days without interruption.

She liſtened to his addreſſes with ſuch affability as denoted approbation and delight, and gently chid him as a thoughtleſs truant, but carefully avoided the confeſſion of a mutual flame; becauſe ſhe diſcerned, in the midſt of all his tenderneſs, a levity of pride which ſhe durſt not venture to truſt with ſuch a declaration. Perhaps ſhe was confirmed in this caution by her mother, who very wiſely, in her civilities to him, main-

maintained a ſort of ceremonious diſtance, which ſhe thought not only requiſite for the honour and intereſt of her family, but likewiſe for her own exculpation, ſhould ſhe ever be taxed with having encouraged or abetted him in the imprudent ſallies of his youth: yet notwithſtanding this affected reſerve, he was treated with ſuch diſtinction by both that he was raviſhed with his ſituation, and became more and more enamoured every day.

While he remained under the influence of this ſweet intoxication, his abſence produced great diſturbance at Wincheſter. Mr. Jolter was grievouſly afflicted at his abrupt departure, which alarmed him the more, as it happened after a long fit of melancholy which he had perceived in his pupil. He communicated his apprehenſions to the maſter of the ſchool, who adviſed him to appriſe the commodore of his nephew's diſappearance, and in the mean time enquire at all the inns in town, whether he had hired horſes, or any ſort of carriage, for his conveyance, or was met with on the road by any perſon who could give an account of the direction in which he travelled.

This ſcrutiny, tho' performed with great diligence and minuteneſs, was altogether ineffectual; they could obtain no intelligence of the runaway. Mr. Trunnion was well nigh diſtracted at the news of his flight; he raved with great fury at the imprudence of Peregrine, whom in his firſt tranſports he damned as an ungrateful deſerter; then he curſed Hatchway and Pipes, who he ſwore had foundered the lad by their pernicious counſels; and, laſtly, transferred his execrations upon Jolter, becauſe he had not kept a better look-

look-out: finally, he made an apoſtrophe to that ſon of a bitch the gout, which for the preſent diſabled him from ſearching for his nephew in perſon. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power, he immediately diſpatched expreſſes to all the ſeaport towns on that coaſt, that he might be prevented from leaving the kingdom; and the lieutenant, at his own deſire, was ſent acroſs the country, in queſt of this young fugitive.

Four days had he unſucceſsfully carried on his inquiries with great accuracy, when, reſolving to return by Wincheſter, where he hoped to meet with ſome hints of intelligence, by which he might profit in his future ſearch, he ſtruck off the common road to take the benefit of a nearer cut; and finding himſelf benighted near a village, took up his lodging at the firſt inn to which his horſe directed him. Having beſpoke ſomething for ſupper, and retired to his chamber, where he amuſed himſelf with a pipe, he heard a confuſed noiſe of ruſtic jollity, which being all of a ſudden interrupted, after a ſhort pauſe his ear was ſaluted with the voice of Pipes, who, at the ſollicitation of the company, began to entertain them with a ſong.

Hatchway inſtantly recognized the well known ſound, in which indeed he could not poſſibly be miſtaken, as nothing in nature bore the leaſt reſemblance to it; he threw his pipe into the chimney, and ſnatching up one of his piſtols, ran immediately to the apartment from whence the voice iſſued; he no ſooner entered, than diſtinguiſhing his old ſhip-mate in a crowd of country peaſants, in a moment ſprung upon him, and clapping his piſtol to his breaſt, exclaimed, "Damn

"Damn you, Pipes, you are a dead man, if you don't immediately produce young maſter."

This menacing application had a much greater effect upon the company than upon Tom, who looking at the lieutenant with great tranquillity, replied, "Why ſo I can, Maſter Hatchway." "What! ſafe and ſound?" cried the other. "As a roach," anſwered Pipes, ſo much to the ſatisfaction of his friend Jack, that he ſhook him by the hand, and deſired him to proceed with his ſong. This being performed, and the reckoning diſcharged, the two friends adjourned to the other room, where the lieutenant was informed of the manner in which the young gentleman had made his elopement from college, as well as of the other particulars of his preſent ſituation, as far as they had fallen within the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While they ſat thus conferring together, Peregrine having taken his leave of his miſtreſs for the night, came home, and was not a little ſurpriſed, when Hatchway entering his chamber in his ſea attitude, thruſt out his hand by way of ſalutation. His old pupil received him as uſual, with great cordiality, and expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at meeting him in that place; but when he underſtood the cauſe and intention of his arrival, he ſtarted with concern; and his viſage glowing with indignation, told him he was old enough to be judge of his own conduct, and when he ſhould ſee it convenient, would return of himſelf; but thoſe who thought he was to be compelled to his duty, would find themſelves egregiouſly miſtaken.

The lieutenant aſſured him, that for his own part he had no intention to offer him the leaſt vio-

violence; but, at the ſame time, he repreſented to him the danger of incenſing the commodore, who was already almoſt diſtracted on account of his abſence: and in ſhort, conveyed his arguments, which were equally obvious and valid, in ſuch expreſſions of friendſhip and reſpect, that Peregrine yielded to his remonſtrances, and promiſed to accompany him next day to Wincheſter.

Hatchway, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his negociation, went immediately to the hoſtler and beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Mr. Pickle and his man, with whom he afterwards indulged himſelf in a double cann of rumbo, and when the night was pretty far advanced, left the lover to his repoſe, or rather to the thorns of his own meditation; for he ſlept not one moment, being inceſſantly tortured with the proſpect of parting from his divine Emilia, who had now acquired the moſt abſolute empire over his ſoul. One minute he propoſed to depart early in the morning, without ſeeing this enchantreſs, in whoſe bewitching preſence he durſt not truſt his own reſolution. Then the thoughts of leaving her in ſuch an abrupt and diſreſpectful manner, interpoſed in favour of his love and honour. This war of ſentiments kept him all night upon the rack, and it was time to riſe before he had determined to viſit his charmer, and candidly impart the motives that induced him to leave her.

He accordingly repaired to her mother's houſe with a heavy heart, being attended to the gate by Hatchway, who did not chooſe to leave him alone; and being admitted found Emilia juſt riſen, and, in his opinion, more beautiful than ever.

Alarmed at his early viſit, and the gloom that over-

overſpread his countenance, ſhe ſtood in ſilent expectation of hearing ſome melancholy tidings; and it was not till after a conſiderable pauſe, that he collected reſolution enough to tell her he was come to take his leave. Though ſhe ſtrove to conceal her ſorrow, nature was not to be ſuppreſſed; every feature of her countenance ſaddened in a moment, and it was not without the utmoſt difficulty that ſhe kept her lovely eyes from overflowing. He ſaw the ſituation of her thoughts, and in order to alleviate her concern, aſſured her he ſhould find means to ſee her again in a very few weeks; mean while he communicated his reaſons for departing, in which ſhe readily acquieſced; and having mutually conſoled each other, their tranſports of grief ſubſided, and before Mrs. Gauntlet came down ſtairs they were in a condition to behave with great decency and reſignation.

This good lady expreſſed her concern when ſhe learned his reſolution, ſaying, ſhe hoped his occaſions and inclinations would permit him to favour them with his agreeable company another time.

The lieutenant, who began to be uneaſy at Peregrine's ſtay, knocked at the door, and being introduced by his friend, had the honour of breakfaſting with the ladies; on which occaſion his heart received ſuch a rude ſhock from the charms of Emilia, that he afterwards made a merit with his friend of having conſtrained himſelf ſo far, as to forbear commencing his profeſſed rival.

At length they bad adieu to their kind entertainers, and in leſs than an hour ſetting out from the

the inn, arrived about two o'clock in Wincheſter, where Mr. Jolter was overwhelmed with joy at their appearance.

The nature of this adventure being unknown to all except thoſe who could be depended upon, every body who enquired about the cauſe of Peregrine's abſence, was told that he had been with a relation in the country, and the maſter condeſcended to overlook his indiſcretion; ſo that Hatchway ſeeing every thing ſettled to the ſatisfaction of his friend, returned to the gariſon, and gave the commodore an account of his expedition.

The old gentleman was very much ſtartled when he heard there was a lady in the caſe, and very emphatically obſerved, that a man had better be ſucked into the gulph of Florida than once get into the indraught of a woman; becauſe in one caſe, he may with good pilotage bring out his veſſel ſafe between the Bahama's and the Indian ſhore; but in the other there is no outlet at all, and it is in vain to ſtrive againſt the current; ſo that of courſe he muſt be embayed, and run chuck upon a lee ſhore. He reſolved, therefore, to lay the ſtate of the caſe before Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, and concert ſuch meaſures with him as ſhould be thought likelieſt to detach his ſon from the purſuit of an idle amour, which could not fail of interfering in a dangerous manner with the plan of his education.

In the mean time, Perry's ideas were totally engroſſed by his amiable miſtreſs, who, whether he ſlept or waked, was ſtill preſent in his imagination, which produced the following ſtanza's in her praiſe.

I.

I.

Adieu, ye ſtreams that ſmoothly flow,
Ye vernal airs that ſoftly blow,
Ye plains by blooming ſpring array'd,
Ye birds that warble thro' the ſhade.

II.

Unhurt from you my ſoul could fly,
Nor drop one tear, nor heave one ſigh,
But forc'd from Celia's charms to part,
All joy deſerts my drooping heart.

III.

O! fairer than the roſy morn,
When flowers the dewy fields adorn;
Unſullied as the genial ray,
That warms the balmy breeze of May.

IV.

Thy charms divinely bright appear,
And add new ſplendor to the year;
Improve the day with freſh delight,
And gild with joy the dreary night!

This juvenile production was incloſed in a very tender billet to Emilia, and committed to the charge of Pipes, who was ordered to ſet out for Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation with a preſent of veniſon, and a compliment to the ladies; and directed to take ſome opportunity of delivering the letter to miſs, without the knowledge of her mamma.

CHAP. XIX.

His meſſenger meets with a misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary expedient that is attended with ſtrange conſequences.

AS a ſtage coach paſſed within two miles of the village where ſhe lived, Tom bargained with the driver for a ſeat on the box, and accordingly departed on this meſſage, though he was but indifferently qualified for commiſſions of ſuch a nature: having received particular injunctions about the letter, he reſolved to make that the chief object of his care, and very ſagaciouſly conveyed it between his ſtocking and the ſole of his foot, where he thought it would be perfectly ſecure from all injury and accident. Here it remained until he arrived at the inn where he had formerly lodged, when after having refreſhed himſelf with a draught of beer, he pulled off his ſtocking, and found the poor billet ſullied with duſt, and torn into a thouſand tatters by the motion of his foot in walking the laſt two miles of his journey. Thunderſtruck at this phænomenon, he uttered a long and loud *whew!* which was ſucceeded by an exclamation of "Damn my old ſhoes! a bite by G—!" then he reſted his elbows on the table, and his forehead upon his two fiſts, and in that attitude deliberated with himſelf upon the means of remedying this misfortune.

As he was not diſtracted by a vaſt number of ideas, he ſoon concluded that his beſt expedient would be to employ the clerk of the pariſh, who he knew was a great ſcholar, to write another epiſtle according to the directions he ſhould give him;

him; and never dreaming that the mangled original would in the leaſt facilitate this ſcheme, he very wiſely committed it to the flames, that it might never riſe up in judgment againſt him.

Having taken this wiſe ſtep, he went in queſt of the ſcribe, to whom he communicated his buſineſs, and promiſed a full pot by way of gratification. The clerk, who was alſo ſchool-maſter, proud of an opportunity to diſtinguiſh his talents, readily undertook the taſk; and repairing with his employer to the inn, in leſs than a quarter of an hour produced a morſel of eloquence ſo much to the ſatisfaction of Pipes, that he ſqueezed his hand by way of acknowledgment, and doubled his allowance of beer. This being diſcuſſed, our courier betook himſelf to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet with the haunch of veniſon and this ſuccedaneous letter, and delivered his meſſage to the mother, who received it with great reſpect, and many kind enquiries about the health and welfare of his maſter, attempting to tip the meſſenger a crown, which he abſolutely refuſed to accept, in conſequence of Mr. Pickle's repeated caution. While the old gentlewoman turned to a ſervant, in order to give directions about the diſpoſal of the preſent, Pipes looked upon this as a favourable occaſion to tranſact his buſineſs with Emilia, and therefore ſhutting one eye, with a jirk of his thumb towards his left ſhoulder, and a moſt ſignificant twiſt of his countenance, he beckoned the young lady into another room, as if he had been fraught with ſomething of conſequence, which he wanted to impart. She underſtood the hint howſoever ſtrangely communicated, and by ſtepping to one ſide of the room, gave him an opportunity of ſlipping the epiſtle into her hand,

which he gently ſqueezed at the ſame time in token of regard: then throwing a ſide-glance at the mother, whoſe back was turned, clapped his finger on the ſide of his noſe, thereby recommending ſecrecy and diſcretion.

Emilia conveying the letter into her boſom, could not help ſmiling at Tom's politeneſs and dexterity; but leſt her mamma ſhould detect him in the execution of his pantomime, ſhe broke off this intercourſe of ſigns, by aſking aloud when he propoſed to ſet out on his return to Wincheſter. When he anſwered, "To-morrow morning." Mrs. Gauntlet recommended him to the hoſpitality of her own footman, deſiring him to make much of Mr. Pipes below, where he was kept to ſupper, and very cordially entertained. Our young heroine, impatient to read her lover's billet, which made her heart throb with rapturous expectation, retired to her chamber as ſoon as poſſible, with a view of peruſing the contents, which were theſe:

Divine empreſs of my ſoul!

IF the refulgent flames of your beauty had not evaporated the particles of my tranſported brain, and ſcorched my intellects into a cinder of ſtolidity, perhaps the reſplendency of my paſſion might ſhine illuſtrious through the ſable curtain of my ink, and in ſublimity tranſcend the galaxy itſelf, though wafted on the pinions of a grey gooſe quill! But ah! celeſtial enchantreſs! the necromancy of thy tyrannical charms hath fettered my faculties with adamantine chains, which unleſs thy compaſſion ſhall melt, I muſt eternally remain in the tartarean gulph of diſmal

deſpair.

deſpair. Vouchſafe therefore, O thou brighteſt luminary of this terreſtrial ſphere! to warm as well as ſhine; and let the genial rays of thy benevolence melt the icy emanations of thy diſdain, which hath frozen up the ſpirits of, angelic preheminence! thy moſt egregious admirer and ſuperlative ſlave,

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Never was aſtoniſhment more perplexing than that of Emilia, when ſhe read this curious compoſition, which ſhe repeated verbatim three times before ſhe would credit the evidence of her own ſenſes. She began to fear in good earneſt that love had produced a diſorder in her lover's underſtanding; but after a thouſand conjectures by which ſhe attempted to account for this extraordinary fuſtian of ſtile, ſhe concluded that it was the effect of mere levity, calculated to ridicule the paſſion he had formerly profeſſed. Irritated by this ſuppoſition, ſhe reſolved to baulk his triumph with affected indifference, and in the mean time endeavour to expel him from that place which he poſſeſſed within her heart. And indeed, ſuch a victory over her inclinations might have been obtained without great difficulty; for ſhe enjoyed an eaſineſs of temper that could accommodate itſelf to the emergencies of her fate; and her vivacity, by amuſing her imagination, preſerved her from the keener ſenſations of ſorrow. Thus determined and diſpoſed, ſhe did not ſend any ſort of anſwer, or the leaſt token of remembrance by Pipes, who was ſuffered to depart with a general compliment from the mother, and arrived at Wincheſter the next day.

Peregrine's eyes ſparkled when he ſaw his meſſenger come in, and he ſtretched out his hand in full confidence of receiving ſome particular mark of his Emilia's affection; but how was he confounded, when he found his hope ſo cruelly diſappointed! in an inſtant his countenance fell. He ſtood for ſome time ſilent and abaſhed, then thrice repeated the interrogation of "What! not one word from Emilia?" And dubious of his courier's diſcretion, inquired minutely into all the particulars of his reception. He aſked if he had ſeen the young lady, if ſhe was in good health, if he had found an opportunity of delivering his letter, and how ſhe looked when he put it into her hand? Pipes anſwered, that he had never ſeen her in better health or higher ſpirits; that he had managed matters ſo as not only to preſent the billet unperceived, but alſo to aſk her commands in private before he took his leave, when ſhe told him that the letter required no reply. This laſt circumſtance he conſidered as a manifeſt mark of diſreſpect, and gnawed his lips with reſentment. Upon further reflection, however, he ſuppoſed that ſhe could not conveniently write by the meſſenger, and would undoubtedly favour him by the poſt. This conſideration conſoled him for the preſent, and he waited impatiently for the fruits of his hope; but after he had ſeen eight days elapſed without reaping the ſatisfaction with which he had flattered himſelf, his temper forſook him, he raved againſt the whole ſex, and was ſeized with a fit of ſullen chagrin; but his pride in a little time came to his aſſiſtance, and reſcued him from the horrors of the melancholy fiend. He reſolved to retort her own neglect upon his ungrateful

ungrateful miſtreſs, his countenance gradually reſumed its former ſerenity; and though by this time he was pretty well cured of his foppery, he appeared again at public diverſions with an air of gaiety and unconcern, that Emilia might have a chance of hearing how much, in all likelihood, he diſregarded her diſdain.

There are never wanting certain officious perſons, who take pleaſure in promoting intelligence of this ſort. His behaviour ſoon reached the ears of Miſs Gauntlet, and confirmed her in the opinion ſhe had conceived from his letter; ſo that ſhe fortified herſelf in her former ſentiments, and bore his indifference with great philoſophy. Thus a correſpondence which had commenced with all the tenderneſs and ſincerity of love, and every promiſe of duration, was interrupted in its infancy by a miſunderſtanding occaſioned by the ſimplicity of Pipes, who never once reflected upon the conſequences of his deceit.

Though their mutual paſſion was by theſe means ſuppreſſed for the preſent, it was not altogether extinguiſhed, but glowed in ſecret, though even to themſelves unknown, until an occaſion which afterwards offered, blew up the latent flame, and love reſumed his empire in their breaſts.

While they moved, as it were, without the ſphere of each other's attraction, the commodore fearing that Perry was in danger of involving himſelf in ſome pernicious engagement, reſolved by advice of Mr. Jolter and his friend the pariſh prieſt, to recall him from the place where he had contracted ſuch imprudent connections, and ſend him to the univerſity, where his education might be compleated, and his fancy weaned from all puerile amuſements.

This plan had been propoſed to his own father, who, as hath been already obſerved, ſtood always neuter in every thing that concerned his eldeſt ſon; and as for Mrs. Pickle, ſhe had never heard his name mentioned ſince his departure with any degree of temper or tranquillity, except when her huſband informed her that he was in a fair way of being ruined by this indiſcreet amour. It was then ſhe began to applaud her own foreſight, which had diſcerned the mark of reprobation in that vicious boy, and launched out in compariſon between him and Gammy, who, ſhe obſerved, was a child of uncommon parts and ſolidity, and with the bleſſing of God, would be a comfort to his parents, and an ornament to the family.

Should I affirm that this favourite whom ſhe commended ſo much, was in every reſpect the reverſe of what ſhe deſcribed; that he was a boy of mean capacity, and though remarkably diſtorted in his body, much more crooked in his diſpoſition! and that ſhe had perſuaded her huſband to eſpouſe her opinion, though it was contrary to common ſenſe, as well as to his own perception; I am afraid the reader will think I repreſent a monſter that never exiſted in nature, and be apt to condemn the œconomy of my invention; nevertheleſs, there is nothing more true than every circumſtance of what I have advanced; and I wiſh the picture, ſingular as it is, may not be thought to reſemble more than one original.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

Peregrine *is ſummoned to attend his uncle, is more and more hated by his own mother; appeals to his father, whoſe condeſcenſion is defeated by the dominion of his wife.*

BUT waving theſe reflections, let us return to Peregrine, who received a ſummons to attend his uncle, and in a few days arrived with Mr. Jolter and Pipes at the gariſon, which he filled with joy and ſatisfaction. The alteration, which, during his abſence, had happened in his perſon, was very favourable in his appearance, which from that of a comely boy, was converted into that of a moſt engaging youth. He was already taller than a middle ſized man, his ſhape aſcertained, his ſinews well knit, his mien greatly improved, and his whole figure as elegant and graceful, as if it had been caſt in the ſame mould with the Apollo of Belvidere.

Such an outſide could not fail of prepoſſeſſing people in his favour. The commodore, notwithſtanding the advantageous reports he had heard, found his expectation exceeded in the perſon of Peregrine, and ſignified his approbation in the moſt ſanguine terms. Mrs. Trunnion was ſtruck with his genteel addreſs, and received him with uncommon marks of complacency and affection; he was careſſed by all the people in the neighbourhood, who, while they admired his accompliſhments, could not help pitying his infatuated mother, for being deprived of that unutterable delight which any other parent would

have enjoyed in the contemplation of ſuch an amiable ſon.

Divers efforts were made by ſome well-diſpoſed people, to conquer, if poſſible, this monſtrous prejudice; but their endeavours, inſtead of curing, ſerved only to inflame the diſtemper, and ſhe never could be prevailed upon to indulge him with the leaſt mark of maternal regard. On the contrary, her original diſguſt degenerated into ſuch inveteracy of hatred, that ſhe left no ſtone unturned to alienate the commodore's affection for this her innocent child, and even practiſed the moſt malicious defamation to accompliſh her purpoſe. Every day did ſhe abuſe her huſband's ear with ſome forged inſtance of Peregrine's ingratitude to his uncle, well knowing that it would reach the commodore's knowledge at night.

Accordingly Mr. Pickle uſed to tell him at the club, that his hopeful favourite had ridiculed him in ſuch a company, and aſperſed his ſpouſe upon another occaſion; and thus retail the little ſcandalous iſſue of his own wife's invention. Luckily for Peregrine, the commodore paid no great regard to the authority of his informer, becauſe he knew from what canal his intelligence flowed; beſides, the youth had a ſtaunch friend in Mr. Hatchway, who never failed to vindicate him when he was thus unjuſtly accuſed, and always found argument enough to confute the aſſertions of his enemies. But, though Trunnion had been dubious of the young gentleman's principles, and deaf to the remonſtrances of the lieutenant, Perry was provided with a bulwark ſtrong enough to defend him from all ſuch aſſaults. This was no other than his aunt, whoſe regard for him was per-

perceived to increaſe in the ſame proportion as his own mother's diminiſhed; and indeed, the augmentation of the one was, in all probability, owing to the decreaſe of the other; for the two ladies, with great civility, performed all the duties of good neighbourhood, and hated each other moſt piouſly in their hearts.

Mrs. Pickle having been diſobliged at the ſplendor of her ſiſter's new equipage, had ever ſince that time, in the courſe of her viſiting, endeavoured to make people merry with ſatirical jokes on the poor lady's infirmities; and Mrs. Trunnion ſeized the very firſt opportunity of making repriſals, by inveighing againſt her unnatural behaviour to her own child; ſo that Peregrine, as on the one hand he was abhorred, ſo on the other was he careſſed in conſequence of this contention; and I firmly believe that the moſt effectual method of deſtroying his intereſt at the gariſon, would have been the ſhew of countenancing him at his father's houſe: but, whether this conjecture be reaſonable or chimerical, certain it is the experiment was never tried, and therefore Mr. Peregrine ran no riſque of being diſgraced. The commodore, who aſſumed, and juſtly too, the whole merit of his education, was now as proud of the youth's improvements, as if he had actually been his own offspring; and ſometimes his affection roſe to ſuch a pitch of enthuſiaſm, that he verily believed him to be the iſſue of his own loins. Notwithſtanding this favourable predicament in which our hero ſtood with his aunt and her huſband, he could not help feeling the injury he ſuffered from the caprice of his mother; and though the gaiety of his diſpoſition hindered him from afflicting himſelf with

reflections of any gloomy caſt, he did not fail to foreſee that if any ſudden accident ſhould deprive him of the commodore, he would in all likelihood find himſelf in a very diſagreeable ſituation. Prompted by this conſideration, he one evening accompanied his uncle to the club, and was introduced to his father, before that worthy gentleman had the leaſt inkling of his arrival.

Mr. Gamaliel was never ſo diſconcerted as at this rencounter. His own diſpoſition would not ſuffer him to do any thing that might create the leaſt diſturbance, or interrupt his evening's enjoyment; ſo ſtrongly was he impreſſed with the terror of his wife, that he durſt not yield to the tranquillity of his temper: and, as I have already obſerved, his inclination was perfectly neutral. Thus diſtracted between different motives, when Perry was preſented to him, he ſat ſilent and abſorpt, as if he did not or would not perceive the application; and when he was urged to declare himſelf by the youth, who pathetically begged to know how he had incurred his diſpleaſure, he anſwered in a peeviſh ſtrain, "Why, good now, child, what would you have me to do? your mother can't abide you." "If my mother is ſo unkind, I will not call it unnatural, (ſaid Peregrine, the tears of indignation ſtarting from his eyes) as to baniſh me from her preſence and affection, without the leaſt cauſe aſſigned; I hope you will not be ſo unjuſt as to eſpouſe her barbarous prejudice." Before Mr. Pickle had time to reply to this expoſtulation, for which he was not at all prepared, the commodore interpoſed, and enforced his favourite's remonſtrance, by telling Mr. Gamaliel that he was aſhamed to ſee any man drive in ſuch a miſerable manner under his wife's

wife's petticoat. "As for my own part, (ſaid he, raiſing his voice, and aſſuming a look of importance and command) before I would ſuffer myſelf to be ſteered all weathers by any woman in Chriſtendom, d'ye ſee, I'd raiſe ſuch a hurricane about her ears that"——Here he was interrupted by Mr. Hatchway, who thruſting his head towards the door, in the attitude of one that liſtens, cried "Ahey! there's your ſpouſe come to pay "us a viſit." Trunnion's features that inſtant adopted a new diſpoſition: fear and confuſion took poſſeſſion of his countenance; his voice from a tone of vociferation ſunk into a whiſper of "Sure you muſt be miſtaken, Jack;" and in great perplexity he wiped off the ſweat which had ſtarted on his forehead at this falſe alarm. The lieutenant having thus puniſhed him for the rhodomontade he had uttered, told him with an arch ſneer, that he was deceived by the ſound of the outward door creaking upon its hinges, which he miſtook for Mrs. Trunnion's voice, and deſired him to proceed with his admonitions to Mr. Pickle. It is not to be denied that this arrogance was a little unſeaſonable in the commodore, who was in all reſpects as effectually ſubdued to the dominion of his wife, as the perſon whoſe ſubmiſſion he then ventured to condemn; with this difference of diſpoſition: Trunnion's ſubjection was like that of a bear, chequered with fits of ſurlineſs and rage; whereas Pickle bore the yoke like an ox, without repining. No wonder then that this indolence, this ſluggiſhneſs, this ſtagnation of temper, rendered Gamaliel incapable of withſtanding the arguments and importunity of his friends, to which he at length ſurrendered. He acquieſced in the juſtice

tice of their obſervations, and taking his ſon by the hand, promiſed to favour him for the future with his love and fatherly protection.

But this laudable reſolution did not laſt; Mrs. Pickle, ſtill dubious of his conſtancy, and jealous of his communication with the commodore, never failed to interrogate him every night about the converſation that happened at the club; and regulate her exhortations according to the intelligence ſhe received. He was no ſooner, therefore, ſafely conveyed to bed, (that academy in which all notable wives communicate their lectures) when her catechiſm began; and ſhe in a moment perceived ſomething reluctant and equivocal in her huſband's anſwers. Arrouſed at this diſcovery, ſhe employed her influence and ſkill with ſuch ſucceſs, that he diſcloſed every circumſtance of what had happened; and after having ſuſtained a moſt ſevere rebuke for his ſimplicity and indiſcretion, humbled himſelf ſo far as to promiſe that he would next day annul the condeſcenſions he had made, and for ever renounce the ungracious object of her diſguſt. This undertaking was punctually performed in a letter to the commodore, which ſhe herſelf dictated in theſe words.

SIR,

WHereas my good-nature being laſt night impoſed upon, I was perſuaded to countenance and promiſe I know not what to that vicious youth, whoſe parent I have the misfortune to be; I deſire you will take notice that I revoke all ſuch countenance and promiſes, and ſhall never look upon that man as my friend, who will henceforth in ſuch a cauſe ſolicit,

Sir, yours, &c.

GAM. PICKLE.

CHAP. XXI.

Trunnion is enraged at the conduct of Pickle. Peregrine *resents the injustice of his mother, to whom he explains his sentiments in a letter. He entered at the University of* Oxford, *where he signalizes himself as a youth of an enterprising genius.*

UNspeakable were the transports of rage to which Trunnion was incensed by this absurd renunciation: he tore the letter with his gums, (teeth he had none) spit with furious grimaces, in token of the contempt he entertained for the author, whom he not only damned as a lousy, scabby, nasty, scurvy, sculking, lubberly noodle, but resolved to challenge to single combat with fire and sword; but he was dissuaded from this violent measure, and appeased by the intervention and advice of the lieutenant and Mr. Jolter, who represented the message as the effect of the poor man's infirmity, for which he was rather an object of pity than of resentment; and turned the stream of his indignation against the wife, whom he reviled accordingly. Nor did Peregrine himself, bear with patience this injurious declaration, the nature of which he no sooner understood from Hatchway, than equally shocked and exasperated, he retired to his apartment, and in the first emotions of his ire, produced the following epistle, which was immediately conveyed to his mother.

MADAM,

MADAM,

HAD nature formed me a bugbear to the ſight, and inſpired me with a ſoul as vicious as my body was deteſtable, perhaps I might have enjoyed particular marks of your affection and applauſe: ſeeing you have perſecuted me with ſuch unnatural averſion, for no other viſible reaſon than that of my differing ſo widely in ſhape as well as diſpoſition, from that deformed urchin who is the object of your tenderneſs and care. If thoſe be the terms on which alone I can obtain your favour, I pray God you may never ceaſe to hate,

Madam,

Your moſt injured ſon,

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

This letter, which nothing but his paſſion and inexperience could excuſe, had ſuch an effect upon his mother, as may be eaſily conceived. She was enraged to a degree of frenzy againſt the writer: though at the ſame time ſhe conſidered the whole as the production of Mrs. Trunnion's particular pique, and repreſented it to her huſband as an inſult that he was bound in honour to reſent, by breaking off all correſpondence with the commodore and his family. This was a bitter pill to Gamaliel, who, through a long courſe of years, was ſo habituated to Trunnion's company, that he could as eaſily have parted with a limb, as have relinquiſhed the club all at once. He therefore ventured to repreſent his own incapacity to follow her advice, and begged that he might at leaſt be allowed to drop the connexion gradually;

ally; proteſting that he would do his endeavour to give her all manner of ſatisfaction.

Mean while preparations were made for Peregrine's departure to the univerſity, and in a few weeks he ſet out in the ſeventeenth year of his age, accompanied by the ſame attendants who lived with him at Wincheſter. His uncle laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to avoid the company of immodeſt women, to mind his learning, to let him hear of his welfare as often as he could ſpare time to write, and ſettled his appointments at the rate of five hundred a year, including his governor's ſalary, which was one fifth part of the ſum. The heart of our young gentleman dilated at the proſpect of the figure he ſhould make with ſuch an handſome annuity, the management of which was left at his own diſcretion: and he amuſed his imagination with the moſt agreeable reveries during his journey to Oxford, which he performed in two days. Here being introduced to the head of the college, to whom he had been recommended, accommodated with genteel apartments, entered as gentleman commoner in the books, and provided with a judicious tutor, inſtead of returning to the ſtudy of Greek and Latin, in which he thought himſelf already ſufficiently inſtructed; he renewed his acquaintance with ſome of his old ſchool-fellows, whom he found in the ſame ſituation, and was by them initiated in all the faſhionable diverſions of the place.

It was not long before he made himſelf remarkable for his ſpirit and humour, which were ſo acceptable to the bucks of the univerſity, that he was admitted as a member of their corporation, and in a very little time became the moſt con-

conſpicuous perſonage of the whole fraternity; not that he valued himſelf upon his ability in ſmoaking the greateſt number of pipes, and drinking the largeſt quantity of ale; theſe were qualifications of too groſs a nature to captivate his refined ambition. He piqued himſelf on his talent for raillery, his genius and taſte, his perſonal accompliſhments, and his ſucceſs at intrigue: nor were his excurſions confined to the ſmall villages in the neighbourhood, which are commonly viſited once a week by the ſtudents for the ſake of carnal recreation. He kept his own horſes, traverſed the whole country in parties of pleaſure, attended all the races within fifty miles of Oxford, and made frequent jaunts to London, where he uſed to lie incognito during the beſt part of many a term.

The rules of the univerſity were too ſevere to be obſerved by a youth of his vivacity; and therefore he became acquainted with the proctor, by times. But all the checks he received were inſufficient to moderate his career; he frequented taverns and coffee-houſes, committed midnight frolics in the ſtreets, inſulted all the ſober and pacific claſs of his fellow-ſtudents; the tutors themſelves were not ſacred from his ridicule; he laughed at the magiſtrate, and neglected every particular of college diſcipline.

In vain did they attempt to reſtrain his irregularities by the impoſition of fines; he was liberal to profuſion, and therefore paid without reluctance. Thrice did he ſcale the windows of a tradeſman, with whoſe daughter he had an affair of gallantry, as often was he obliged to ſeek his ſafety by a precipitate leap, and one night would, in all probability, have fallen a ſacrifice

to

to an ambuſcade that was laid by the father, had not his truſty ſquire Pipes interpoſed in his behalf, and manfully reſcued him from the clubs of his enemies.

In the midſt of theſe exceſſes, Mr. Jolter finding his admonitions neglected, and his influence utterly deſtroyed, attempted to wean his pupil from his extravagant courſes, by engaging his attention in ſome more laudable purſuit. With this view he introduced him into a club of politicians, who received him with great demonſtrations of regard, accommodated themſelves more than he could have expected to his jovial diſpoſition, and while they revolved ſchemes for the reformation of the ſtate, drank with ſuch devotion to the accompliſhment of their plans, that before parting the cares of their patriotiſm were quite overwhelmed.

Peregrine, though he could not approve of their doctrine, reſolved to attach himſelf for ſome time to their company; becauſe he perceived ample ſubject for his ridicule, in the characters of theſe wrong-headed enthuſiaſts. It was a conſtant practice with them, in their midnight conſiſtories, to ſwallow ſuch plentiful draughts of inſpiration, that their myſteries commonly ended like thoſe of the Bacchanalian Orgia; and they were ſeldom capable of maintaining that ſolemnity of decorum which by the nature of their functions moſt of them were obliged to profeſs. Now as Peregrine's ſatirical diſpoſition was never more gratified than when he had an opportunity of expoſing grave characters in ridiculous attitudes, he laid a miſchievous ſnare for his new confederates, which took effect in this manner. In one of their nocturnal deliberations, he promoted

moted ſuch a ſpirit of good fellowſhip, by the agreeable ſallies of his wit, which were purpoſely levelled againſt their political adverſaries, that by ten o'clock they were all ready to join in the moſt extravagant propoſal that could be made. They broke their glaſſes in conſequence of his ſuggeſtion, drank healths out of their ſhoes, caps, and the bottoms of the candleſticks that ſtood before them, ſometimes ſtanding with one foot on a chair, and the knee bent on the edge of the table; and when they could no longer ſtand in that poſture, ſetting their bare poſteriors on the cold floor. They huzza'd, hallooed, danced and ſung, and in ſhort were elevated to ſuch a pitch of intoxication, that when Peregrine propoſed that they ſhould burn their perriwigs, the hint was immediately approved, and they executed the frolick as one man. Their ſhoes and caps underwent the ſame fate by the ſame inſtigation, and in this trim he led them forth into the ſtreet, where they reſolved to compel every body they ſhould find to ſubſcribe to their political creed, and pronounce the Shiboleth of their party. In the atchievement of this enterprize, they met with more oppoſition than they expected; they were encountered with arguments which they could not well withſtand; the noſes of ſome, and eyes of others, in a very little time bore the marks of obſtinate diſputation. Their conductor having at length engaged the whole body in a fray with another ſquadron which was pretty much in the ſame condition, he very fairly gave them the ſlip, and ſlily retreated to his apartment, foreſeeing that his companions would ſoon be favoured with the notice of their ſuperiors. Nor was he deceived in his prog-

prognoſtic; the proctor going his round, chanced to fall in with this tumultuous uproar, and interpoſing his authority, found means to quiet the diſturbance. He took cognizance of their names, and diſmiſſed the rioters to their reſpective chambers, not a little ſcandalized at the behaviour of ſome among them, whoſe buſineſs and duty it was to ſet far other examples to the youth under their care and direction.

About midnight, Pipes, who had orders to attend at a diſtance, and keep an eye upon Jolter, brought home that unfortunate governor upon his back (Peregrine having beforehand ſecured his admittance into the college) and among other bruiſes he was found to have received a couple of contuſions on his face, which next morning appeared in a black circle that ſurrounded each eye. This was a mortifying circumſtance to a man of his character and deportment, eſpecially as he had received a meſſage from the proctor, who deſired to ſee him forthwith. With great humility and contrition he begged the advice of his pupil, who being uſed to amuſe himſelf with painting, aſſured Mr. Jolter, that he would cover thoſe ſigns of diſgrace with a ſlight coat of fleſh colour, ſo dextrouſly, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to diſtinguiſh the artificial from the natural ſkin. The rueful governor, rather than expoſe ſuch opprobrious tokens to the obſervation and cenſure of the magiſtrate, ſubmitted to the expedient. Although his counſellor had over-rated his own ſkill, he was perſuaded to confide in the diſguiſe, and actually attended the proctor, with ſuch a ſtaring addition to the natural ghaſtlineſs of his features, that his viſage bore a very apt reſemblance to ſome of thoſe ferocious

rocious countenances that hang over the doors of certain taverns and alehouſes, under the denomination of the Saracen's head.

Such a remarkable alteration of phyſiognomy could not eſcape the notice of the moſt undiſcerning beholder, much leſs the penetrating eye of his ſevere judge, already whetted with what he had ſeen over-night. He was therefore upbraided with his ridiculous and ſhallow artifice, and, together with the companions of his debauch, underwent ſuch a cutting reprimand for the ſcandalous irregularity of his conduct, that all of them remained creſt-fallen, and were aſhamed, for many weeks, to appear in the publick execution of their duty.

Peregrine was too vain of his fineſſe, to conceal the part he acted in this comedy, with the particulars of which he regaled his companions, and thereby intailed upon himſelf the hate and reſentment of the community, whoſe maxims and practices he had diſcloſed; for he was conſidered as a ſpy, who had intruded himſelf into their ſociety with a view of betraying it; or, at beſt, as an apoſtate and renegado from the faith and principles which he had profeſſed.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

He is insulted by his tutor, whom he lampoons; makes considerable progress in polite literature; and in an excursion to Windsor *meets with* Emilia *by accident, and is very coldly received.*

AMONG those who suffered by his craft and infidelity was Mr. Jumble his own tutor, who could not at all digest the mortifying affront he had received, and was resolved to be revenged on the insulting author. With this view he watched the conduct of Mr. Pickle with the utmost rancour of vigilance, and let slip no opportunity of treating him with disrespect, which he knew the disposition of his pupil could less brook than any other severity it was in his power to exercise.

Peregrine had been several mornings absent from chapel; and as Mr. Jumble never failed to question him in a very peremptory stile about his non-attendance, he invented some very plausible excuses; but, at length, his ingenuity was exhausted; he received a very galling rebuke for his profligacy of morals, and that he might feel it the more sensibly, was ordered, by way of exercise, to compose a paraphrase in English verse, upon these two lines in Virgil.

Vane ligur, frustraque animis elate superbis,
Nec quicquam, patrias, tentasti lubricus, artes.

The imposition of this invidious theme had all the desired effect upon Peregrine, who not only considered it as a piece of unmannerly abuse

levelled

levelled againſt his own conduct, but alſo as a retroſpective inſult on the memory of his grandfather, who (as he had been informed) was in his life-time more noted for his cunning than candour in trade.

Exaſperated at this inſtance of the pedant's audacity, he had well-nigh (in his firſt tranſports) taken corporal ſatisfaction on the ſpot; but foreſeeing the troubleſome conſequences that would attend ſuch a flagrant outrage againſt the laws of the univerſity, he checked his indignation, and reſolved to revenge the injury in a more cool and contemptuous manner. Thus determined, he ſet on foot an inquiry into the particulars of Jumble's parentage and education. He learnt that the father of this inſolent tutor was a bricklayer, that his mother ſold pies, and that the ſon, at different periods of his youth, had amuſed himſelf in both occupations, before he converted his views to the ſtudy of learning. Fraught with this intelligence, he compoſed the following ballad in doggerel rhymes, and next day preſented it as a gloſs upon the text which the tutor had choſen.

I.

Come, liſten ye ſtudents of ev'ry degree,
I ſing of a wit and a tutor *perdie*,
A ſtateſman profound, a critick immenſe,
In ſhort, a meer jumble of learning and ſenſe;
And yet of his talents, though laudably vain,
His own family arts he could never attain.

II.

His father intending his fortune to build,
In his youth would have taught him the trowel to wield,

But

But the mortar of diſcipline never would ſtick,
For his ſkull was ſecur'd by a facing of brick,
And with all his endeavours of patience and pain,
The ſkill of his ſire he could never attain.

III.

His mother an houſewife neat, artful and wiſe,
Renown'd for her delicate biſcuit and pyes.
Soon alter'd his ſtudies, by flatt'ring his taſte,
From the raiſing of walls to the rearing of paſte!
But all her inſtructions were fruitleſs and vain,
The pye making myſt'ry he ne'er could attain.

IV.

Yet true to his race, in his labours were ſeen
A jumble of both their profeſſions, I ween;
For, when his own genius he ventur'd to truſt,
His pyes ſeemed of brick, and his houſes of cruſt.
Then, good Mr. Tutor, pray be not ſo vain,
Since your family arts you could never attain.

This impudent production was the moſt effectual vengeance he could have taken on his tutor, who had all the ſupercilious arrogance and ridiculous pride of a low-born pedant. Inſtead of overlooking this petulant piece of ſatire with that temper and decency of diſdain that became a perſon of his gravity and ſtation, he no ſooner caſt his eye over the performance, than the blood ruſhed into his countenance, which immediately after exhibited a ghaſtly pale colour. With a quivering lip he told his pupil that he was an impertinent jackanapes, and he would take care that he ſhould be expelled from the univerſity, for having preſumed to write and deliver ſuch a licentious and ſcurrilous libel. Peregrine anſwered

with great reſolution, that when the provocation he had received ſhould be known, he was perſuaded that he ſhould be acquitted by the opinion of all impartial people; and that he was ready to ſubmit the whole to the deciſion of the maſter.

This arbitration he propoſed, becauſe he knew the maſter and Jumble were at variance; and for that reaſon the tutor durſt not venture to put the cauſe on ſuch an iſſue. Nay, when this reference was mentioned, Jumble, who was naturally jealous, ſuſpected that Peregrine had a promiſe of protection before he undertook to commit ſuch an outrageous inſult; and this notion had ſuch an effect upon him, that he reſolved to devour his vexation, and wait for a more proper opportunity of gratifying his hate. Mean while copies of the ballad were diſtributed among the ſtudents, who ſung it under the very noſe of Mr. Jumble, to the tune of *A C.b'er there was, &c.* and the triumph of our hero was compleat. Neither was his whole time devoted to the riotous extravagancies of youth. He enjoyed many lucid intervals, during which he contracted a more intimate acquaintance with the claſſicks, applied himſelf to the reading of hiſtory, improved his taſte for painting and muſic, in which he made ſome progreſs; and above all things, cultivated the ſtudy of natural philoſophy. It was generally after a courſe of cloſe attention to ſome of theſe arts and ſciences, that his diſpoſition broke out into thoſe irregularities and wild ſallies of a luxuriant imagination, for which he became ſo remarkable; and he was perhaps the only young man in Oxford, who at the ſame time maintained an intimate and friendly intercourſe with the

moſt

moſt unthinking, as well as with the moſt ſedate ſtudents at the univerſity.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that a young man of Peregrine's vanity, inexperience and profuſion, could ſuit his expence to his allowance, liberal as it was; for he was not one of thoſe fortunate people who are born œconomiſts, and knew not the art of withholding his purſe when he ſaw his companion in difficulty. Thus naturally generous and expenſive, he ſquandered away his money, and made a moſt ſplendid appearance upon the receipt of his quarterly appointment; but long before the third month was elapſed, his finances were conſumed, and as he could not ſtoop to aſk an extraordinary ſupply, was too proud to borrow, and too haughty to run in debt with tradeſmen, he devoted thoſe periods of poverty to the proſecution of his ſtudies, and ſhone forth again at the revolution of quarter-day.

In one of theſe irruptions he and ſome of his companions went to Windſor, in order to ſee the royal apartments in the caſtle, whither they repaired in the afternoon; and as Peregrine ſtood contemplating the picture of Hercules and Omphale, one of his fellow-ſtudents whiſpered in his ear, "Z—ds! Pickle, there are two fine girls." He turned inſtantly about, and in one of them recognized his almoſt forgotten Emilia: her appearance acted upon his imagnation like a ſpark of fire that falls among gunpowder; that paſſion which had lain dormant for the ſpace of two years flaſhed up in a moment, and he was ſeized with an univerſal trepidation. She perceived and partook of his emotion; for their ſouls, like uniſons, vibrated with the ſame impulſe. However ſhe called her pride and reſentment to her aid,

and found reſolution enough to retire from ſuch a dangerous ſcene. Alarmed at her retreat, he recollected all his aſſurance, and impelled by love which he could no longer reſiſt, followed her into the next room, where in the moſt diſconcerted manner he accoſted her with "Your humble ſervant, Miſs Gauntlet;" to which ſalutation ſhe replied, with an affectation of indifference that did not, however, conceal her agitation, "Your ſervant, Sir;" and immediately extending her finger towards the picture of Duns Scotus, which is fixed over one of the doors, aſked her companion in a gigling tone, if ſhe did not think he looked like a conjurer. Peregrine, nettled into ſpirits by this reception, anſwered for the other lady, "that it was an eaſy matter to be a conjurer in thoſe times, when the ſimplicity of the age aſſiſted his divination; but were he, or Merlin himſelf, to riſe from the dead now, when ſuch deceit and diſſimulation prevail, they would not be able to earn their bread by the profeſſion." "—O! Sir, ſaid ſhe, (turning full upon him) without doubt they would adopt new maxims; 'tis no diſparagement in this enlightened age for one to alter one's opinion." "No ſure, Madam, replied the youth with ſome precipitation, provided the change be for the better:" "And ſhould it happen otherwiſe, retorted the nymph with a flirt of her fan, inconſtancy will never want countenance from the practice of mankind." "True, Madam, reſumed our hero, fixing his eyes upon her; examples of levity are every where to be met with." "O Lord, Sir, cried Emilia, toſſing her head, you'll ſcarce ever find a fop without it." By this time his companion ſeeing him engaged with one of the ladies, entered into converſation

verſation with the other; and in order to favour his friend's gallantry, conducted her into the next apartment, on pretence of entertaining her with the ſight of a remarkable piece of painting.

Peregrine laying hold on this opportunity of being along with the object of his love, aſſumed a moſt ſeducing tenderneſs of look, and heaving a profound ſigh, aſked if ſhe had utterly diſcarded him from her remembrance. Reddening at this pathetic queſtion, which recalled the memory of the imagined ſlight he had put upon her, ſhe anſwered in great confuſion, "Sir, I believe I once had the pleaſure of ſeeing you at a ball in Wincheſter." "Miſs Emilia, ſaid he, very gravely, will you be ſo candid as to tell me what miſbehaviour of mine you are pleaſed to puniſh, by reſtricting your remembrance to that ſingle occaſion?" "Mr. Pickle, ſhe replied in the ſame tone, it is neither my province nor inclination to judge your conduct; and therefore you miſapply your queſtion when you aſk ſuch an explanation of me." "At leaſt, reſumed our lover, give me the melancholy ſatisfaction to know for what offence of mine you refuſed to take the leaſt notice of that letter which I had the honour to write from Wincheſter by your own expreſs permiſſion." "Your letter, ſaid Miſs with great vivacity, neither required, nor, in my opinion, deſerved an anſwer; and to be free with you, Mr. Pickle, it was but a ſhallow artifice to rid yourſelf of a correſpondence you had deigned to ſolicit." Peregrine, confounded at this repartee, replied that howſoever he might have failed in point of elegance or diſcretion, he was ſure he had not been deficient in expreſſions of reſpect and devotion

for thoſe charms which it was his pride to adore: "As for the verſes, ſaid he, I own they were unworthy of the theme, but I flattered myſelf that they would have merited your acceptance, though not your approbation, and been conſidered not ſo much as the proof of my genius, as the genuine effuſion of my love." "Verſes! cried Emilia with an air of aſtoniſhment, what verſes? I really don't underſtand you." The young gentleman was thunderſtruck at this exclamation, to which, after a long pauſe, he anſwered, "I begin to ſuſpect, and heartily wiſh it may appear that we have miſunderſtood each other from the beginning. Pray, Miſs Gauntlet, did not you find a copy of verſes incloſed in that unfortunate letter?" "Truly, Sir, (ſaid the lady) I am not ſo much of a connoiſſeur as to diſtinguiſh whether that facetious production which you merrily ſtile an unfortunate letter was compoſed in verſe or proſe; but, methinks, the jeſt is a little too ſtale to be brought upon the carpet again." So ſaying, ſhe tripped away to her companion, and left her lover in a moſt tumultuous ſuſpence. He now perceived that her neglect of his addreſſes when he was at Wincheſter, muſt have been owing to ſome myſtery which he could not comprehend: and ſhe began to ſuſpect and to hope that the letter which ſhe received was ſpurious, though ſhe could not conceive how that could poſſibly happen, as it had been delivered to her by the hands of his own ſervant.

However, ſhe reſolved to leave the taſk of unravelling the affair to him, who, ſhe knew, would infallibly exert himſelf for his own as well as her ſatisfaction. She was not deceived in her opinion; he went up to her again at the ſtair-

caſe,

caſe, and as they were unprovided with a male attendant, inſiſted upon ſquiring the ladies to their lodgings. Emilia ſaw his drift, which was no other than to know where ſhe lived; and though ſhe approved of his contrivance, thought it was incumbent upon her for the ſupport of her own dignity to decline his civility: ſhe therefore thanked him for his polite offer, but would by no means conſent to his giving himſelf ſuch unneceſſary trouble, eſpecially as they had a very little way to walk. He was not repulſed by this refuſal, the nature of which he perfectly underſtood; nor was ſhe ſorry to ſee him perſevere in his determination; he therefore accompained them in their return, and made divers efforts to ſpeak with Emilia in particular: but ſhe had a ſpice of the coquette in her diſpoſition, and being determined to whet his impatience, artfully baffled all his endeavours, by keeping her companion continually engaged in the converſation, which turned upon the venerable appearance and imperial ſituation of the place. Thus tantalized, he lounged with them to the door of the houſe in which they lodged, when his miſtreſs perceiving by the countenance of her comrade, that ſhe was on the point of deſiring him to walk in, checked her intention with a frown, then turning to Mr. Pickle, dropped him a very formal curt'ſey, ſeized the other young lady by the arm, and ſaying, "Come, couſin Sophy," vaniſhed in a moment.

CHAP. XXIII.

After ſundry unſucceſsful efforts, he finds means to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs; and a reconciliation enſues.

PEregrine, diſconcerted at their ſudden diſappearance, ſtood for ſome minutes gaping in the ſtreet, before he could get the better of his ſurprize; and then deliberated with himſelf whether he ſhould demand immediate admittance to his miſtreſs, or chooſe ſome other method of application. Piqued at her abrupt behaviour, though pleaſed with her ſpirit, he ſet his invention to work, in order to contrive ſome means of ſeeing her; and in a fit of muſing arrived at the inn, where he found his companions whom he had left at the caſtle-gate. They had already made inquiry about the ladies, in conſequence of which he learnt that Miſs Sophy was daughter of a gentleman in town to whom his miſtreſs was related; that an intimate friendſhip ſubſiſted between the two young ladies; that Emilia had lived about a month with her couſin, and appeared at the laſt aſſembly, where ſhe was univerſally admired; and that ſeveral young gentlemen of fortune had ſince that time teized her with addreſſes.

Our hero's ambition was flattered, and his paſſion inflamed with this intelligence; and he ſwore within himſelf that he would not quit the ſpot until he ſhould have obtained an indiſputed victory over all his rivals.

That ſame evening he compoſed a moſt eloquent epiſtle, in which he earneſtly entreated that

ſhe would favour him with an opportunity of vindicating his conduct; but ſhe would neither receive his billet nor ſee his meſſenger. Baulked in this effort, he incloſed it in a new cover directed by another hand, and ordered Pipes to ride next morning to London, on purpoſe to deliver it at the poſt-office; that coming by ſuch conveyance, ſhe might have no ſuſpicion of the author, and open it before ſhe ſhould be aware of the deceit.

Three days he waited patiently for the effect of this ſtratagem, and in the afternoon of the fourth, ventured to hazard a formal viſit, in quality of an old acquaintance. But here too he failed in his attempt; ſhe was indiſpoſed and could not ſee company. Theſe obſtacles ſerved only to increaſe his eagerneſs; he ſtill adhered to his former reſolution; and his companions underſtanding his determination, left him next day to his own inventions. Thus relinquiſhed to his own ideas, he doubled his aſſiduity, and practiſed every method his imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to promote his plan.

Pipes was ſtationed all day long within ſight of her door, that he might be able to give his maſter an account of her motions; but ſhe never went abroad except to viſit in the neighbourhood, and was always houſed before Peregrine could be apprized of her appearance. He went to church with a view of attracting her notice, and humbled his deportment before her; but ſhe was ſo miſchievouſly devout as to look at nothing but her book, ſo that he was not favoured with one glance of regard. He frequented the coffee-houſe, and attempted to contract an acquaintance with Miſs Sophy's father, who, he hoped, would

invite him to his houſe; but this expectation was alſo defeated. That prudent gentleman looked upon him as one of thoſe forward fortune hunters who go about the country ſeeking whom they may devour, and warily diſcouraged all his advances. Chagrined by ſo many unſucceſsful endeavours, he began to deſpair of accompliſhing his aim, and as the laſt ſuggeſtion of his art, paid off his lodging, took horſe at noon, and departed, in all appearance, for the place from whence he had come. He rode, however, but a few miles, and in the duſk of the evening returned unſeen, alighted at another inn, ordered Pipes to ſtay within doors, and keeping himſelf incognito, employed another perſon as a centinel upon Emilia.

It was not long before he reaped the fruits of his ingenuity. Next day in the afternoon he was informed by his ſpy, that the two young ladies were gone to walk in the park, whither he followed them on the inſtant fully determined to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs, even in preſence of her friend, who might poſſibly be prevailed upon to intereſt herſelf in his behalf.

When he ſaw them at ſu h a diſtance that they could not return to town before he ſhould have an opportunity of putting his reſolution in practice, he mended his pace, and found means to appear before them ſo ſuddenly, that Emilia could not help expreſſing her ſurprize in a ſcream. Our lover putting on a mien of humility and mortification, begged to know if her reſentment was implacable; and aſked why ſhe had ſo cruelly refuſed to grant him the common privilege that every criminal enjoyed. "Dear Miſs Sophy, ſaid he addreſſing himſelf to her companion, give

me

me leave to implore your interceſſion with your couſin; I am ſure you have humanity enough to eſpouſe my cauſe, did you but know the juſtice of it; and I flatter myſelf, that by your kind interpoſition, I may be able to rectify that fatal miſunderſtanding which hath made we wretched." "Sir, ſaid Sophy, you appear like a gentleman, and I doubt not but your behaviour has been always ſuitable to your appearance; but you muſt excuſe me from undertaking any ſuch office in behalf of a perſon whom I have not the honour to know." "Madam, anſwered Peregrine, I hope Miſs Emy will juſtify my pretenſions to that character, notwithſtanding the myſtery of her diſpleaſure, which upon my honour I cannot for my ſoul explain." "Lord! Mr. Pickle, ſaid Emilia, (who had by this time recollected herſelf) I never queſtioned your gallantry and taſte, but I am reſolved that you ſhall never have cauſe to exerciſe your talents at my expence; ſo that you teize yourſelf and me to no purpoſe: come, Sophy, let us walk home again." "Good God! madam, (cried the lover with great emotion) why will you diſtract me with ſuch barbarous indifference? Stay, dear Emilia! I conjure you on my knees to ſtay and hear me: by all that is ſacred! I was not to blame; you muſt have been impoſed upon by ſome villain who envied my good fortune, and took ſome treacherous method to ruin my love."

Miſs Sophy, who poſſeſſed a large ſtock of good nature, and to whom her couſin had communicated the cauſe of her reſerve, ſeeing the young gentleman ſo much affected with that diſdain which ſhe knew to be feigned, laid hold on Emilia's ſleeve, ſaying with a ſmile, "Not quite

ſo faſt, Emily; I begin to perceive that this is a love quarrel, and therefore there may be hopes of a reconciliation; for I ſuppoſe both parties are open to conviction." "For my own part, (cried Peregrine with great eagerneſs) I appeal to Miſs Sophy's deciſion. But why do I ſay appeal! Tho' I am conſcious of having committed no offence, I am ready to ſubmit to any penance, let it be never ſo rigorous, that my fair inſlaver herſelf ſhall impoſe, provided it will intitle me to her favour and forgiveneſs at laſt." Emily, well nigh overcome by this declaration, told him that as ſhe taxed him with no guilt, ſhe expected no attonement; and preſſed her companion to return into town. But Sophy, who was too indulgent to her friend's real inclination to comply with her requeſt, obſerved that the gentleman ſeemed ſo reaſonable in his conceſſions, ſhe began to think her couſin was in the wrong, and felt herſelf diſpoſed to act as umpire in the diſpute.

Overjoyed at this condeſcenſion, Mr. Pickle thanked her in the moſt rapturous terms, and in the tranſport of his expectation, kiſſed the hand of his kind mediatrix; a circumſtance which had a remarkable effect on the countenance of Emilia, who did not ſeem to reliſh the warmth of his acknowledgment.

After many ſupplications on one hand, and preſſing remonſtrances on the other, ſhe yielded at length, and turning to her lover, while her face was overſpread with bluſhes. "Well, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) ſuppoſing I were to put the difference on that iſſue, how could you excuſe the ridiculous letter which you ſent to me from Wincheſter?" This expoſtulation introduced a diſcuſſion of the whole affair, in which all the circumſtances were can-

canvaſſed; and Emilia ſtill affirmed with great heat, that the letter muſt have been calculated to affront her; for ſhe could not ſuppoſe the author was ſo weak as to deſign it for any other purpoſe.

Peregrine, who ſtill retained in his memory the ſubſtance of this unlucky epiſtle, as well as the verſes which were incloſed, could recollect no particular expreſſion which could have juſtly given the leaſt umbrage; and therefore in the agonies of perplexity, begged that the whole might be ſubmitted to the judgment of Miſs Sophy; and faithfully promiſed to ſtand to her award.

In ſhort, this propoſal was with ſeeming reluctance embraced by Emilia, and an appointment made to meet next day in the ſame place, whither both parties were deſired to come provided with their credentials, according to which definitive ſentence would be pronounced.

Our lover having ſucceeded thus far, overwhelmed Sophy with acknowledgments on account of her generous mediation, and in the courſe of their walk, which Emilia was now in no hurry to conclude, whiſpered a great many tender proteſtations in the ear of his miſtreſs, who, nevertheleſs, continued to act upon the reſerve, until her doubts ſhould be more fully reſolved.

Mr. Pickle having found means to amuſe them in the fields till the twilight, was obliged to wiſh them good even, after having obtained a ſolemn repetition of their promiſe to meet him at the appointed time and place; and then retreated to his apartment, where he ſpent the whole night in various conjectures on the ſubject of this letter, the

the gordian knot of which he could by no means untie.

One while he imagined that ſome wag had played a trick upon his meſſenger, in conſequence of which Emilia had received a ſuppoſititious letter; but upon further reflection, he could not conceive the practicability of any ſuch deceit. Then he began to doubt the ſincerity of his miſtreſs, who, perhaps, had only made that an handle for diſcarding him, at the requeſt of ſome favoured rival; but his own integrity forbad him to harbour this mean ſuſpicion; and therefore he was again involved in the labyrinth of perplexity. Next day he waited on the rack of impatience for the hour of five in the afternoon, which no ſooner ſtruck, than he ordered Pipes to attend him, in caſe there ſhould be occaſion for his evidence; and repaired to the place of rendezvous, where he had not tarried five minutes before the ladies appeared. Mutual compliments being paſſed, and the attendant ſtationed at a convenient diſtance, Peregrine perſuaded them to ſit down upon the graſs, under the ſhade of a ſpreading oak, that they might be more at their eaſe; while he ſtretched himſelf at their feet, and deſired that the paper on which his doom depended might be examined. It was accordingly put into the hand of his fair arbitreſs, who read it immediately with an audible voice. The firſt two words of it were no ſooner pronounced, than he ſtarted with great emotion, and raiſed himſelf upon his hand and knee, in which poſture he liſtened to the reſt of the ſentence; then ſprung upon his feet in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and glowing with reſentment at the ſame time, exclaimed, "Hell and the devil! what's all that? Sure

Sure you make a jeſt of me, madam." "Pray, Sir, (ſaid Sophy) give me the hearing for a few moments, and then urge what you ſhall think proper in your own defence." Having thus cautioned him ſhe proceeded; but before ſhe had finiſhed one half of the performance her gravity forſook her, and ſhe was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter, in which neither of the lovers could help joining, notwithſtanding the reſentment which at that inſtant prevailed in the breaſts of both. The judge, however, in a little time, reſumed her ſolemnity, and having read the remaining part of this curious epiſtle, all three continued ſtaring at each other alternately for the ſpace of half a minute, and then broke forth at the ſame inſtant in another paroxiſm of mirth. From this unanimous convulſion, one would have thought that both parties were extremely well pleaſed with the joke, yet this was by no means the caſe.

Emilia imagined that notwithſtanding his affected ſurprize, her lover in ſpite of himſelf had renewed the laugh at her expence, and in ſo doing, applauded his own unmannerly ridicule. This ſuppoſition could not fail of raiſing and reviving her indignation, while Peregrine highly reſented the indignity with which he ſuppoſed himſelf treated, in their attempting to make him the dupe of ſuch a groſs and ludicrous artifice. This being the ſituation of their thoughts, their mirth was ſucceeded by a mutual gloomineſs of aſpect, and the judge addreſſing herſelf to Mr. Pickle, aſked if he had any thing to offer why ſentence ſhould not be pronounced. "Madam, anſwered the culprit, I am ſorry to find myſelf ſo low in the opinion of your couſin, as to be

be thought capable of being deceived by ſuch a ſhallow contrivance." "Nay, Sir, ſaid Emilia, the contrivance is your own, and I cannot help admiring your confidence in imputing it to me." "Upon my honour, Miſs Emily, reſumed our hero, you wrong my underſtanding as well as my love in accuſing me of having written ſuch a ſilly impertinent performance; the very appearance and addreſs of it is ſo unlike the letter which I did myſelf the honour to write, that I dare ſay my man, even at this diſtance of time, will remember the difference." So ſaying, he extended his voice, and beckoned to Pipes, who immediately drew near. His miſtreſs ſeemed to object to the evidence, by obſerving that to be ſure Mr. Pipes had his cue; when Peregrine begging ſhe would ſpare him the mortification of conſidering him in ſuch a diſhonourable light, deſired his valet to examine the outſide of the letter, and recollect if it was the ſame which he had delivered to Miſs Gauntlet about two years ago Pipes having taken a ſuperficial view of it, pulled up his breeches, ſaying. "Mayhap it is, but we have made ſo many trips, and been in ſo many creeks and corners ſince that time, that I can't pretend to be certain; for I neither keep journal nor logbook of our proceedings." Emilia commended him for his candour, at the ſame time darting a ſarcaſtic look at his maſter, as if ſhe thought he had tampered with his ſervant's integrity in vain; and Peregrine began to rave and curſe his fate for having ſubjected him to ſuch mean ſuſpicion, atteſting heaven and earth in the moſt earneſt manner, that far from having compoſed and conveyed that ſtupid production, he had never

ver ſeen it before, nor been privy to the leaſt circumſtance of the plan.

Pipes, now for the firſt time, perceived the miſchief which he had occaſioned, and moved with the tranſports of his maſter, for whom he had a moſt inviolable attachment, frankly declared he was ready to make oath that Mr. Pickle had no hand in the letter which he delivered. All three were amazed at this confeſſion, the meaning of which they could not comprehend. Peregrine, after ſome pauſe, leaped upon Pipes, and ſeizing him by the throat, exclaimed in an extaſy of rage, "Raſcal! tell me this inſtant what became of the letter I intruſted to your care." The patient valet, half ſtrangled as he was, ſquirted a collection of tobacco juice out of one corner of his mouth, and with great deliberation replied, "Why burnt it, you wouldn't have me give the young woman a thing that ſhook all in the wind in tatters, would you?" The ladies interpoſed in behalf of the diſtreſſed ſquire, from whom, by dint of queſtions which he had neither art nor inclination to evade, they extorted an explanation of the whole affair.

Such ridiculous ſimplicity and innocence of intention appeared in the compoſition of his expedient, that even the remembrance of all the chagrin which it had produced, could not rouſe their indignation, or enable them to reſiſt a third eruption of laughter which they forthwith underwent.

Pipes was diſmiſſed with many menacing injunctions, to beware of ſuch conduct for the future; Emilia ſtood with a confuſion of joy and tenderneſs in her countenance; Peregrine's eyes kindled into rapture, and when Miſs Sophy pro-

nouounced

nounced the ſentence of reconciliation, advanced to his miſtreſs, ſaying, "Truth is mighty, and will prevail;" then claſping her in his arms, very impudently raviſhed a kiſs, which ſhe had not power to refuſe. Nay, ſuch was the impulſe of his joy, that he took the ſame freedom with the lips of Sophy, calling her his kind mediatrix and guardian angel, and behaved with ſuch extravagance of tranſport, as plainly evinced the fervour and ſincerity of his love.

I ſhall not pretend to repeat the tender proteſtations that were uttered on one ſide, or deſcribe the bewitching glances of approbation with which they were received on the other; ſuffice it to ſay, that the endearing intimacy of their former connexion was inſtantly renewed, and Sophy, who congratulated them upon the happy termination of their quarrel, favoured with their mutual confidence. In conſequence of this happy pacification, they deliberated upon the means of ſeeing each other often; and as he could not without ſome previous introduction viſit her openly at the houſe of her relation, they agreed to meet every afternoon in the park till the next aſſembly, at which he would ſolicit her as a partner, and ſhe be unengaged, in expectation of his requeſt. By this connection he would be intitled to viſit her next day, and thus an avowed correſpondence would of courſe commence. This plan was actually put in execution, and attended with a circumſtance which had well nigh produced ſome miſchievous conſequence, had not Peregrine's good fortune been ſuperior to his diſcretion.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

He atchieves an adventure at the aſſembly, and quarrels with his governor.

AT the aſſembly, were no fewer than three gentlemen of fortune, who rivalled our lover in his paſſion for Emilia, and who had ſeverally begged the honour of dancing with her upon that occaſion. She had excuſed herſelf to each, on pretence of a ſlight indiſpoſition that ſhe foreſaw would detain her from the ball, and deſired they would provide themſelves with other partners. Obliged to admit her excuſe, they accordingly followed her advice; and after they had engaged themſelves beyond the power of retracting, had the mortification to ſee her there unclaimed.

They in their turn made up to her, and expreſſed their ſurprize and concern at finding her in the aſſembly unprovided, after ſhe had declined their invitation; but ſhe told them that her cold had forſaken her ſince ſhe had the pleaſure of ſeeing them, and that ſhe would rely upon accident for a partner. Juſt as ſhe pronounced theſe words to the laſt of the three, Peregrine advanced as an utter ſtranger, bowed with great reſpect, told her he underſtood ſhe was unengaged, and would think himſelf highly honoured in being accepted as her partner for the night; and he had the good fortune to ſucceed in his application.

As they were by far the handſomeſt and beſt accompliſhed couple in the room, they could not fail of attracting the notice and admiration of the ſpectators, which inflamed the jealouſy of his three

three competitors, who immediately entered into a conſpiracy againſt this gaudy ſtranger, whom, as their rival, they reſolved to affront in public. Purſuant to the plan which they projected for this purpoſe, the firſt country dance was no ſooner concluded, than one of them with his partner took place of Peregrine and his miſtreſs, contrary to the regulation of the ball. Our lover imputing his behaviour to inadvertency, informed the gentleman of his miſtake, and civilly deſired he would rectify his error. The other told him, in an imperious tone, that he wanted none of his advice, and bad him mind his own affairs. Peregrine anſwered with ſome warmth, and inſiſted upon his right; a diſpute commenced, high words enſued, in the courſe of which, our impetuous youth hearing himſelf reviled with the appellation of ſcoundrel, pulled off his antagoniſt's periwig, and flung it in his face. The ladies immediately ſhriek'd, the gentlemen interpoſed, Emilia was ſeized with a fit of trembling, and conducted to her ſeat by her youthful admirer, who begged pardon for having diſcompoſed her, and vindicated what he had done, by repreſenting the neceſſity he was under to reſent the provocation he had received.

Though ſhe could not help owning the juſtice of his plea, ſhe was not the leſs concerned at the dangerous ſituation in which he had involved himſelf, and in the utmoſt conſternation and anxiety, inſiſted upon going directly home: he could not reſiſt her importunities, and her couſin being determined to accompany her, he eſcorted them to their lodgings, where he wiſhed them good night, after having, in order to quiet their apprehenſions, proteſted that if his opponent was

ſatisfied,

ſatisfied, he ſhould never take any ſtep towards the proſecution of the quarrel. Mean while the aſſembly-room became a ſcene of tumult and uproar; the perſon who conceived himſelf injured, ſeeing Peregrine retire, ſtruggled with his companions, in order to purſue and take ſatisfaction of our hero, whom he loaded with terms of abuſe, and challenged to ſingle combat.

The director of the ball held a conſultation with all the ſubſcribers who were preſent, and it was determined by a majority of votes, that the two gentlemen who had occaſioned the diſturbance, ſhould be deſired to withdraw. This reſolution being ſignified to one of the parties then preſent, he made ſome difficulty of complying, but was perſuaded to ſubmit by his two confederates, who accompanied him to the ſtreet-door, where he was met by Peregrine on his return to the aſſembly.

This choleric gentleman, who was a country ſquire, no ſooner ſaw his rival, than he began to brandiſh his cudgel in a menacing poſture, when our adventurous youth ſtepping back with one foot, laid his hand upon the hilt of his ſword, which he drew half way out of the ſcabbard. This attitude, and the ſight of the blade which gliſtened by moonlight in his face, checked, in ſome ſort, the ardour of his aſſailant, who deſired he would lay aſide his toaſter, and take a bout with him at equal arms. Peregrine, who was an expert cudgel-player, accepted the invitation: then exchanging weapons with Pipes who ſtood behind him, put himſelf in a poſture of defence, and received the attack of his adverſary, who ſtruck at random without either ſkill or œconomy. Pickle could have beaten the cudgel out

of

of his hand at the firſt blow, but as in that caſe he would have been obliged in honour to give immediate quarter, he reſolved to diſcipline his antagoniſt without endeavouring to diſable him until he ſhould be heartily ſatisfied with the vengeance he had taken. With this view he returned the ſalute, and raiſed ſuch a clatter about the ſquire's pate, that one who had heard without ſeeing the application, would have miſtaken the ſound for that of a ſalt-box, in the hand of a dextrous Merry-Andrew, belonging to one of the booths at Bartholomew-Fair. Neither was this ſalutation confined to his head; his ſhoulders, arms, thighs, ancles and ribs, were viſited with amazing rapidity, while Tom Pipes ſounded the charge through his fiſt. Peregrine, tired with this exerciſe, which had almoſt bereft his enemy of ſenſation, at laſt ſtruck the deciſive blow, in conſequence of which, the ſquire's weapon flew out of his graſp, and he allowed our hero to be the better man. Satisfied with this acknowledgment, the victor walked up ſtairs with ſuch elevation of ſpirits and inſolence of mien, that nobody choſe to intimate the reſolution which had been taken in his abſence: there having amuſed himſelf for ſome time in beholding the country dances, he retreated to his lodging, where he indulged himſelf all night in the contemplation of his own ſucceſs.

Next day in the forenoon he went to viſit his partner, and the gentleman at whoſe houſe ſhe lived, having been informed of his family and condition, received him with great courteſy, as the acquaintance of his couſin Gauntlet, and invited him to dinner that ſame day.

Emilia was remarkably well pleaſed, when ſhe under-

underſtood the iſſue of his adventure, which began to make ſome noiſe in town, even though it deprived her of a wealthy admirer. The ſquire having conſulted an attorney about the nature of the diſpute, in hopes of being able to proſecute Peregrine for an aſſault, found little encouragement to go to law: he therefore reſolved to pocket the inſult and injury he had undergone, and to diſcontinue his addreſſes to her who was the cauſe of both.

Our lover being told by his miſtreſs that ſhe propoſed to ſtay a fortnight longer at Windſor, he determined to enjoy her company all that time, and then to give her a convoy to the houſe of her mother, whom he longed to ſee. In conſequence of this plan, he every day contrived ſome freſh party of pleaſure for the ladies, to whom he had by this time free acceſs; and intangled himſelf ſo much in the ſnares of love, that he ſeemed quite enchanted by Emilia's charms, which were now indeed almoſt irreſiſtible. While he thus heedleſsly roved in the flowery paths of pleaſure, his governor at Oxford, alarmed at the unuſual duration of his abſence, went to the young gentlemen who had accompanied him in his excurſion, and very earneſtly intreated them to tell him what they knew concerning his pupil; they accordingly gave him an account of the rencounter that happened between Peregrine and Miſs Emily Gauntlet in the Caſtle, and mentioned circumſtances ſufficient to convince him that his charge was very dangerouſly engaged.

Far from having an authority over Peregrine, Mr. Jolter durſt not even diſoblige him; therefore, inſtead of writing to the commodore, he took horſe immediately, and that ſame night reached

reached Windſor, where he found his ſtray ſheep very much ſurprized at his unexpected arrival.

The governor deſiring to have ſome ſerious converſation with him, they ſhut themſelves up in an apartment, when Jolter with great ſolemnity communicated the cauſe of his journey, which was no other than his concern for his pupil's welfare; and very gravely undertook to prove by mathematical demonſtration, that this intrigue, if farther purſued, would tend to the young gentleman's ruin and diſgrace. This ſingular propoſition raiſed the curioſity of Peregrine, who promiſed to yield all manner of attention, and deſired him to begin without further preamble.

The governor, encouraged by this appearance of candour, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in finding him ſo open to conviction, and told him he would proceed upon geometrical principles. Then hemming thrice, obſerved that no mathematical inquiries could be carried on, except upon certain *data*, or conceſſions to truths, that were ſelf-evident; and therefore he muſt crave his aſſent to a few axioms, which he was ſure Mr. Pickle would ſee no reaſon to diſpute. "In the firſt place then, (ſaid he) you will grant, I hope, that youth and diſcretion are with reſpect to each other as two parallel lines, which though infinitely produced, remain ſtill equi-diſtant, and will never coincide: then you muſt allow that paſſion acts upon the human mind in a ratio compounded of the acuteneſs of ſenſe, and conſtitutional heat; and thirdly, you will not deny that the angle of remorſe is equal to that of precipitation. Theſe *poſtulata* being admitted, added he, taking pen, ink and paper, and drawing

ing a parallelogram) let youth be repreſented by the right line *a*, *b*, and diſcretion by another right line *c*, *d*, parallel to the former. Compleat the parallelogram *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, and let the point of interſection, *b*, repreſent perdition. Let paſſion, repreſented under the letter *c*, have a motion in the direction *c*, *a*. At the ſame time, let another motion be communicated to it, in the direction *c*, *d*, it will proceed in the diagonal *c*, *b*, and deſcribe it in the ſame time that it would have deſcribed the ſide *c*, *a*, by the firſt motion, or the ſide *c*, *d*, by the ſecond. To underſtand the demonſtration of this corollary, we muſt premiſe this obvious principle, that when a body is acted upon by a motion of power parallel to a right line given in poſition, this power, or motion, has no effect to cauſe the body to approach towards that line, or recede from it, but to move in a line parallel to a right line only; as appears from the ſecond law of motion: therefore *c*, *a*, being parallel to *d*, *b*,——"

His pupil having liſtened to him thus far, could contain himſelf no longer, but interrupted the inveſtigation with a loud laugh, and told him that his *poſtulata* put him in mind of a certain learned and ingenious gentleman, who undertook to diſprove the exiſtence of natural evil, and aſked no other *datum* on which to found his demonſtration, but an acknowledgment that *every thing that is, is right*. "You may therefore (ſaid he, in a peremptory tone) ſpare yourſelf the trouble of torturing your invention; for, after all, I am pretty certain that I ſhall want capacity to comprehend the diſcuſſion of your lemma, and conſequently be obliged to refuſe my aſſent to your deduction."

Mr. Jolter was diſconcerted at this declaration, and ſo much offended at Peregrine's diſreſpect, that he could not help expreſſing his diſpleaſure, by telling him flatly, that he was too violent and headſtrong to be reclaimed by reaſon and gentle means; that he (the tutor) muſt be obliged, in the diſcharge of his duty and conſcience, to inform the commodore of his pupil's imprudence; that if the laws of this realm were effectual, they would take cognizance of the gipſy who had led him aſtray; and obſerved, by way of contraſt, that if ſuch a prepoſterous intrigue had happened in France, ſhe would have been clapt up in a convent two years ago.

Our lover's eyes kindled with indignation, when he heard his miſtreſs treated with ſuch irreverence; he could ſcarce refrain from inflicting manual chaſtiſement on the blaſphemer, whom he reproached in his wrath as an arrogant pedant, without either delicacy or ſenſe, and cautioned him againſt uſing any ſuch impertinent freedoms with his affairs for the future, on pain of incurring more ſevere effects of his reſentment.

Mr. Jolter, who entertained very high notions of that veneration to which he thought himſelf intitled by his character and qualifications, had not bore, without repining, his want of influence and authority over his pupil againſt whom he cheriſhed a particular grudge, ever ſince the adventure of the painted eye; and therefore, on this occaſion, his politic forbearance had been overcome by the accumulated motives of his diſguſt. Indeed he would have reſigned his charge with diſdain, had not he been encouraged to perſevere, by the hopes of a good living

which

which Trunnion had in his gift, or known how to diſpoſe of himſelf for the preſent to better advantage.

CHAP. XXV.

He receives a letter from his aunt, breaks with the commodore, and diſobliges the lieutenant, who, nevertheleſs, undertakes his cauſe.

MEAN while he quitted the youth in high dudgeon, and that ſame evening diſpatched a letter for Mrs. Trunnion, which was dictated by the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, and of courſe replete with ſevere animadverſions on the miſconduct of his pupil.

In conſequence of this complaint, it was not long before Peregrine received an epiſtle from his aunt, wherein ſhe commemorated all the circumſtances of the commodore's benevolence towards him, when he was helpleſs and forlorn, deſerted and abandoned by his own parents, upbraided him for his miſbehaviour, and neglect of his tutor's advice, and inſiſted upon his breaking off all intercourſe with that girl who had ſeduced his youth, as he valued the continuance of her affection and her huſband's regard.

As our lover's own ideas of generoſity were extremely refined, he was ſhocked at the indelicate inſinuations of Mrs. Trunnion, and felt all the pangs of an ingenuous mind that labours under obligations to a perſon whom it contemns. Far from obeying her injunction, or humbling himſelf by a ſubmiſſive anſwer to her reprehen-

ſion, his reſentment buoyed him up above every ſelfiſh conſideration; he reſolved to attach himſelf to Emilia, if poſſible, more than ever; and although he was tempted to puniſh the officiouſneſs of Jolter, by recriminating upon his life and converſation, he generouſly withſtood the impulſe of his paſſion, becauſe he knew that his governor had no other dependance than the good opinion of the commodore. He could not, however, digeſt in ſilence the ſevere expoſtulations of his aunt; to which he replied by the following letter, addreſſed to her huſband.

"SIR,

THOUGH my temper could never ſtoop to offer, nor, I believe, your diſpoſition deign to receive that groſs incenſe which the illiberal only expect, and none but the baſe minded condeſcend to pay; my ſentiments have always done juſtice to your generoſity, and my intention ſcrupulouſly adhered to the dictates of my duty. Conſcious of this integrity of heart, I cannot but ſeverely feel your lady's unkind (I will not call it ungenerous) recapitulation of the favours I have received; and as I take it for granted, that you knew and approved of her letter, I muſt beg leave to aſſure you, that far from being ſwayed by menaces and reproach, I am determined to embrace the moſt abject extremity of fortune, rather than ſubmit to ſuch diſhonourable compulſion. When I am treated in a more delicate and reſpectful manner, I hope I ſhall behave as becomes,

SIR,

Your obliged

P. PICKLE."

The commodore, who did not underſtand thoſe nice diſtinctions of behaviour, and dreaded the conſequence of Peregrine's amour, againſt which he was ſtrangely prepoſſeſſed, ſeemed exaſperated at the inſolence and obſtinacy of this adopted ſon; to whoſe epiſtle he wrote the following anſwer, which was tranſmitted by the hands of Hatchway, who had orders to bring the delinquent along with him to the gariſon.

" Heark ye child,

YOU need not bring your fine ſpeeches to bear upon me. You only expend your ammunition to no purpoſe. Your aunt told you nothing but truth; for it is always fair and honeſt to be above board, d'ye ſee. I am informed as how you are in chace of a painted galley, which will decoy you upon the flats of deſtruction, unleſs you keep a better look-out and a ſurer reckoning than you have hitherto done; and I have ſent Jack Hatchway to ſee how the land lies, and warn you of your danger: if ſo be as you will put about ſhip, and let him ſteer you into this harbour, you ſhall meet with a ſafe birth and friendly reception; but if you refuſe to alter your courſe, you cannot expect any further aſſiſtance from yours, as you behave,

HAWSER TRUNNION."

Peregrine was equally piqued and diſconcerted at the receipt of this letter, which was quite different from what he had expected, and declared in a reſolute tone to the lieutenant, who brought it, that he might return as ſoon as he pleaſed, for he was determined to conſult his own inclination, and remain for ſome time longer where he was.

Hatchway endeavoured to perſuade him by all the arguments which his ſagacity and friendſhip could ſupply, to ſhew a little more deference for the old man, who was by this time rendered fretful and peeviſh by the gout, which now hindered him from enjoying himſelf as uſual, and who might, in his paſſion, take ſome ſtep very much to the detriment of the young gentleman, whom he had hitherto conſidered as his own ſon. Among other remonſtrances, Jack obſerved that mayhap Peregrine had got under Emilia's hatches, and did not chooſe to ſet her adrift; and if that was the caſe, he himſelf would take charge of the veſſel, and ſee her cargo ſafely delivered; for he had a reſpect for the young woman; and his needle pointed towards matrimony; and as, in all probability, ſhe could not be much the worſe for the wear, he would make ſhift to ſcud through life with her under an eaſy ſail.

Our lover was deaf to all his admonitions, and having thanked him for this laſt inſtance of his complaiſance, repeated his reſolution of adhering to his firſt purpoſe. Hatchway having profited ſo little by mild exhortations, aſſumed a more peremptory aſpect, and plainly told him he neither could nor would go home without him; ſo he had beſt make immediate preparation for the voyage.

Peregrine made no other reply to this declaration than by a contemptuous ſmile, and roſe from his ſeat in order to retire; upon which the lieutenant ſtarted up, and poſting himſelf by the door, proteſted with ſome menacing geſtures, that he would not ſuffer him to run a-head neither. The other, incenſed at his preſumption

in

in attempting to detain him by force, tripped up his wooden leg, and laid him on his back in a moment; then walked deliberately towards the park, in order to indulge his reflection, which at that time teemed with diſagreeable thoughts. He had not proceeded two hundred ſteps, when he heard ſomething blowing and ſtamping behind him; and looking back perceived the lieutenant at his heels, with rage and indignation in his countenance. This exaſperated ſeaman, impatient of the affront he had received, and forgetting all the circumſtances of their former intimacy, advanced with great eagerneſs to his old friend, ſaying, "Look ye, brother, you're a ſaucy boy, and if you was at ſea, I would have your backſide brought to the Davit for your diſobedience; but as we are on ſhore, you and I muſt crack a piſtol at one another; here is a brace, you ſhall take which you pleaſe."

Peregrine, upon recollection, was ſorry for having been laid under the neceſſity of diſobliging honeſt Jack, and very frankly aſked his pardon for what he had done. But this condeſcenſion was miſinterpreted by the other, who refuſed any other ſatisfaction but that which an officer ought to claim; and, with ſome irreverent expreſſions, aſked if Perry was afraid of his bacon. The youth, inflamed at this unjuſt inſinuation, darted a ferocious look at the challenger, told him he had paid but too much regard to his infirmities, and bid him walk forward to the park, where he would ſoon convince him of his error, if he thought his conceſſion proceeded from fear.

About this time, they were overtaken by Pipes, who having heard the lieutenant's fall, and ſeen him pocket his piſtols, ſuſpected that

there was a quarrel in the caſe, and followed him with a view of protecting his maſter. Peregrine ſeeing him arrive, and gueſſing his intention, aſſumed an air of ſerenity, and pretending that he had left his handkerchief at the inn, ordered his man to go thither and fetch it to him in the park, where he would find them at his return. This command was twice repeated before Tom would take any other notice of the meſſage, except by ſhaking his head; but being urged with many threats and curſes to obedience, he gave them to underſtand that he knew their driſt too well to truſt them by themſelves. "As for you, lieutenant Hatchway (ſaid he) I have been your ſhip-mate, and know you to be a ſailor, that's enough; and as for maſter, I know him to be as good a man as ever ſtept betwixt ſtem and ſtern, whereby, if you have any thing to ſay to him, I am your man, as the ſaying is. Here's my ſapling, and I don't value your crackers of a rope's end." This oration, the longeſt that ever Pipes was known to make, he concluded with a flouriſh of his cudgel, and enforced with ſuch determined refuſals to leave them, that they found it impoſſible to bring the cauſe to mortal arbitrement at that time, and ſtrolled about the park in profound ſilence; during which, Hatchway's indignation ſubſiding, he all of a ſudden thruſt out his hand as an advance to reconciliation, which being cordially ſhaken by Peregrine, a general pacification enſued; and was followed by a conſultation about the means of extricating the youth from his preſent perplexity. Had his diſpoſition been like that of moſt other young men, it would have been no difficult taſk to overcome his difficulties; but

ſuch

ſuch was the obſtinacy of his pride, that he deemed himſelf bound in honour to reſent the letters he had received; and inſtead of ſubmitting to the pleaſure of the commodore, expected an acknowledgment from him, without which he would liſten to no terms of accommodation. "Had I been his own ſon (ſaid he) I ſhould have bore his reproof, and ſued for forgiveneſs; but knowing myſelf to be on the footing of an orphan who depends intirely upon his benevolence, I am jealous of every thing that can be conſtrued into diſreſpect, and inſiſt upon being treated with the moſt punctual regard. I ſhall now make application to my father, who is obliged to provide for me by the ties of nature, as well as the laws of the land; and if he ſhall refuſe to do me juſtice, I can never want employment while men are required for his majeſty's ſervice."

The lieutenant, alarmed at this intimation, begged he would take no new ſtep until he ſhould hear from him; and that very evening ſet out for the gariſon, where he gave Trunnion an account of the miſcarriage of his negotiation, told him how highly Peregrine was offended at the letter, communicated the young gentleman's ſentiments and reſolution; and finally aſſured him, that unleſs he ſhould think proper to aſk pardon for the offence he had committed, he would, in all appearance, never more behold the face of his godſon.

The old commodore was utterly confounded at this piece of intelligence; he had expected all the humility of obedience and contrition from the young man; and inſtead of that, received nothing but the moſt indignant oppoſition, and

even found himſelf in the circumſtances of an offender, obliged to make atonement, or forfeit all correſpondence with his favourite. Theſe inſolent conditions at firſt threw him into an agony of wrath, and he vented execrations with ſuch rapidity, that he left himſelf no time to breathe, and had almoſt been ſuffocated with his choler. He inveighed bitterly againſt the ingratitude of Peregrine, whom he mentioned with many opprobrious epithets, and ſwore that he ought to be keel-hawled for his preſumption; but when he began to reflect more coolly upon the ſpirit of the young gentleman, which had already manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions, and liſtened to the ſuggeſtions of Hatchway, whom he had always conſidered as an oracle in his way, his reſentment abated, and he determined to take Perry into favour again; this placability being not a little facilitated by Jack's narrative of our hero's intrepid behaviour at the aſſembly, as well as in the conteſt with him in the park. But ſtill this plaguy amour occurred like a bugbear to his imagination; for he held it as an infallible maxim, that woman was an eternal ſource of miſery to man. Indeed this apothegm he ſeldom repeated ſince his marriage, except in the company of a very few intimates, to whoſe ſecrecy and diſcretion he could truſt. Finding Jack himſelf at a nonplus in the affair of Emilia, he conſulted Mrs. Trunnion, who was equally ſurpriſed and offended, when ſhe underſtood that her letter did not produce the deſired effect; and after having imputed the youth's obſtinacy to his uncle's unſeaſonable indulgence, had recourſe to the advice of the parſon, who ſtill with an eye to his friend's advantage, counſelled them to ſend

the young gentleman on his travels, in the courſe of which he would, in all probability, forget the amuſements of his greener years. The propoſal was judicious, and immediately approved, when Trunnion going into his cloſet, after divers efforts, produced the following billet, with which Jack departed for Windſor that ſame afternoon.

" My good lad,

IF I gave offence in my laſt letter, I'm ſorry for't, d'ye ſee; I thought it was the likelieſt way to bring you up; but, in time to come, you ſhall have a larger ſwing of cable. When you can ſpare time, I ſhall be glad if you will make a ſhort trip, and ſee your aunt, and him who is

Your loving godfather
and humble ſervant,
HAWSER TRUNNION.

P. S. If you want money, you may draw upon me payable at ſight."

CHAP. XXVI.

He becomes melancholy and deſpondent; is favoured with a condeſcending letter from his uncle, reconciles himſelf to his governor, and ſets out with Emilia *and her friend for Mrs.* Gauntlet's *houſe.*

PEregrine, fortified as he was with pride and indignation, did not fail to feel the ſmarting ſuggeſtions of his preſent ſituation: after having lived ſo long in an affluent and imperious

manner, he could ill brook the thoughts of ſubmitting to the mortifying exigencies of life. All the gaudy ſchemes of pomp and pleaſure, which his luxuriant imagination had formed, began to diſſolve, a train of melancholy ideas took poſſeſſion of his thoughts, and the proſpect of loſing Emilia was not the leaſt part of his affliction. Though he endeavoured to ſuppreſs the chagrin that preyed upon his heart, he could not conceal the diſturbance of his mind from the penetration of that amiable young lady, who ſympathized with him in her heart, though ſhe could not give her tongue the liberty of aſking the cauſe of his diſorder; for, notwithſtanding all the ardour of his addreſſes, he never could obtain from her the declaration of a mutual flame; becauſe, though he had hitherto treated her with the utmoſt reverence of reſpect, he had never once mentioned the final aim of his paſſion. However honourable ſhe ſuppoſed it to be, ſhe had diſcernment enough to foreſee, that vanity or intereſt co-operating with the levity of youth, might one day deprive her of her lover, and ſhe was too proud to give him any handle of exulting at her expence. Although he was received by her with the moſt diſtinguiſhed civility, and even an intimacy of friendſhip, all his ſolicitations could never extort form her an acknowledgment of love; on the contrary, being of a gay diſpoſition, ſhe ſometimes coquetted with other admirers, that his attention thus whetted might never abate, and that he might ſee ſhe had other reſources, in caſe he ſhould flagg in his affection.

This being the prudential plan on which ſhe acted, it cannot be ſuppoſed that ſhe would condeſcend

deſcend to inquire into the ſtate of his thoughts, when ſhe ſaw him thus affected; but ſhe, nevertheleſs, impoſed that taſk on her couſin and confidante, who as they walked together in the park, obſerved that he ſeemed to be out of humour. When this is the caſe, ſuch a queſtion generally increaſes the diſeaſe; at leaſt it had that effect upon Peregrine, who replied ſomewhat peeviſhly, "I aſſure you, Madam, you never was more miſtaken in your obſervations." "I think ſo too (ſaid Emilia) for I never ſaw Mr. Pickle in higher ſpirits." This ironical encomium compleated his confuſion; he affected to ſmile, but it was a ſmile of anguiſh, and in his heart he curſed the vivacity of both. He could not for his ſoul recollect himſelf, ſo as to utter one connected ſentence; and the ſuſpicion that they obſerved every circumſtance of his behaviour, threw ſuch a damp on his ſpirits, that he was quite overwhelmed with ſhame and reſentment, when Sophy caſting her eyes towards the gate, ſaid, "Yonder is your ſervant, Mr. Pickle, with another man who ſeems to have a wooden leg." Peregrine ſtarted at this intelligence, and immediately underwent ſundry changes of complexion, knowing that his fate, in a great meaſure, depended upon the information he would receive from his friend.

Hatchway advancing to the company, after a brace of ſea bows to the ladies, took the youth aſide, and put the commodore's letter into his hand, which threw him into ſuch an agitation, that he could ſcarce pronounce, "Ladies, will you give me leave?" When, in conſequence of their permiſſion, he attempted to open the billet, he fumbled with ſuch manifeſt diſorder, that

that his miſtreſs, who watched his motions, began to think there was ſomething very intereſting in the meſſage; and ſo much was ſhe affected with his concern, that ſhe was fain to turn her head another away, and wipe the tears from her lovely eyes.

Mean while Peregrine no ſooner read the firſt ſentence than his countenance, which before was overcaſt with a deep gloom, began to be lighted up, and every feature unbending by degrees, he recovered his ſerenity. Having peruſed the letter, his eyes ſparkling with joy and gratitude, he hugged the lieutenant in his arms, and preſented him to the ladies as one of his beſt friends. Jack met with a moſt gracious reception, and ſhook Emilia by the hand, telling her, with the familiar appellation of *old acquaintance*, that he did not care how ſoon he was maſter of ſuch another clean-going frigate as herſelf.

The whole company partook of this favourable change that evidently appeared in our lover's recollection, and enlivened his converſation with ſuch an uncommon flow of ſprightlineſs and good humour, as even made an impreſſion on the iron countenance of Pipes himſelf, who actually ſmiled with ſatisfaction as he walked behind them.

The evening being pretty far advanced, they directed their courſe homeward; and while the valet attended Hatchway to the inn, Peregrine eſcorted the ladies to their lodgings, where he owned the juſtneſs of Sophy's remark, in ſaying he was out of humour, and told them he had been extremely chagrined at a difference which had happened between him and his uncle, to whom (by the letter which they had ſeen him receive)

receive) he now found himſelf happily reconciled.

Having received their congratulations, and declined ſtaying to ſup with them, on account of the longing deſire he had to converſe with his friend Jack, he took his leave, and repaired to the inn, where Hatchway informed him of every thing that had happened in the gariſon upon his repreſentations. Far from being diſguſted, he was perfectly well pleaſed with the proſpect of going abroad, which flattered his vanity and ambition, gratified his thirſt after knowledge, and indulged that turn for obſervation, for which he had been remarkable from his moſt tender years. Neither did he believe a ſhort abſence would tend to the prejudice of his love, but, on the contrary, inhance the value of his heart, becauſe he ſhould return better accompliſhed, and conſequently a more welcome offering to his miſtreſs. Elevated with theſe ſentiments, his heart dilated with joy, and the ſluices of his natural benevolence being opened by this happy turn of his affairs, he ſent his compliments to Mr. Jolter, to whom he had not ſpoken during a whole week, and deſired he would favour Mr. Hatchway and him with his company at ſupper.

The governor was not weak enough to decline this invitation, in conſequence of which he forthwith appeared, and was cordially welcomed by the relenting pupil, who expreſſed his ſorrow for the miſunderſtanding which had prevailed between them, and aſſured him that for the future he would avoid giving him any juſt cauſe of complaint. Jolter, who did not want affections, was melted by this acknowledgment, which he could not have expected, and earneſtly proteſted, that

that his chief ſtudy had always been, and ever ſhould be, to promote Mr. Pickle's intereſt and happineſs.

The beſt part of the night being ſpent in the circulation of a chearful glaſs, the company broke up; and next morning Peregrine went out with a view of making his miſtreſs acquainted with his uncle's intention of ſending him out of the kingdom for his improvement, and of ſaying every thing which he thought neceſſary for the intereſt of his love. He found her at breakfaſt with her couſin; and as he was very full of the ſubject of his viſit, had ſcarce fixed himſelf in his ſeat, when he brought it upon the carpet, by aſking with a ſmile, if the ladies had any commands for Paris? Emilia at this queſtion began to ſtare, and her confidante deſired to know who was going thither? He no ſooner gave them to underſtand, that he himſelf intended in a ſhort time to viſit that capital, than his miſtreſs with great precipitation, wiſhed him a good journey, and affected to talk with indifference about the pleaſures he would enjoy in France: but when he ſeriouſly aſſured Sophy, who aſked if he was in earneſt, that his uncle actually inſiſted upon his making a ſhort tour, the tears guſhed in poor Emilia's eyes, and ſhe was at great pains to conceal her concern, by obſerving that the tea was ſo ſcalding hot, as to make her eyes water. This pretext was too thin to impoſe upon her lover, or even deceive the obſervation of her friend Sophy, who, after breakfaſt, took an opportunity of quitting the room.

Thus left by themſelves, Peregrine imparted to her what he had learnt of the commodore's intention, without, however, mentioning a ſyl-

lable

lable of his being offended at their correſpondence; and accompanied his information with ſuch fervent vows of eternal conſtancy and ſolemn promiſes of a ſpeedy return, that Emily's heart, which had been invaded by a ſuſpicion, that this ſcheme of travelling was the effect of her lover's inconſtancy, began to be more at eaſe; and ſhe could not help ſignifying her approbation of his deſign.

This affair being amicably compromiſed, he aſked how ſoon ſhe propoſed to ſet out for her mother's houſe; and underſtanding that her departure was fixed for next day but one, and that her couſin Sophy intended to accompany her in her father's chariot, he repeated his intention of attending her. In the mean time he diſmiſſed his governor and the lieutenant to the gariſon, with his compliments to his aunt and the commodore, and a faithful promiſe of his being with them in ſix days at fartheſt.

Theſe previous meaſures being taken, he, attended by Pipes, ſet out with the ladies; and they had alſo a convoy for twelves miles from Sophy's father, who, at parting, recommended them piouſly to the care of Peregrine, with whom, by this time, he was perfectly well acquainted.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

They meet with a dreadful alarm on the road, arrive at their journey's end. Peregrine *is introduced to* Emily's *brother, theſe two young gentlemen miſunderſtand each other.* Pickle *departs for the gariſon.*

AS they travelled at an eaſy rate, they had performed ſomething more than one half of their journey, when they were benighted near an inn, at which they reſolved to lodge; the accommodation was very good, they ſupped together with great mirth and enjoyment, and it was not till after he had been warned by the yawns of the ladies, that he conducted them to their apartment; where wiſhing them good night, he retired to his own, and went to reſt.

The houſe was crowded with country people who had been at a neighbouring fair, and now regaled themſelves with ale and tobacco in the yard; ſo that their conſideration, which at any time was but ſlender, being now overwhelmed by this debauch, they ſtaggered into their reſpective kennels, and left a lighted candle ſticking to one of the wooden pillars that ſupported the gallery. The flame in a little time laid hold on the wood, which was as dry as tinder, and the whole gallery was on fire, when Peregrine ſuddenly waked, and found himſelf almoſt ſuffocated. He ſprung up in an inſtant, ſlipped on his breeches, and throwing open the door of his chamber, ſaw the whole entry in a blaze.

Heavens! what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he beheld the volumes of flame and ſmoke rolling

rolling towards the room where his dear Emilia lay! Regardleſs of his own danger, he darted himſelf through the thickeſt of the gloom, when knocking hard, and calling at the ſame time to the ladies, with the moſt anxious intreaty to be admitted; the door was opened by Emilia in her ſhift, who aſked, with the utmoſt trepidation, what was the matter? He made no reply, but ſnatching her up in his arms, like another Æneas, bore her through the flames to a place of ſafety; where leaving her before ſhe could recollect herſelf, or pronounce one word, but "Alas! my couſin Sophy!" he flew back to the reſcue of that young lady, and found her already delivered by Pipes, who having been alarmed by the ſmell of fi e, had got up, ruſhed immediately to the chamber where he knew theſe companions lodged, and (Emily being ſaved by her lover) brought off Miſs Sophy with the loſs of his own ſhock-head of hair, which was ſinged off in his retreat.

By this time the whole inn was alarmed; every lodger, as well as ſervant, exerted himſelf, in order to ſtop the progreſs of this calamity; and there being a well repleniſhed horſe-pond in the yard, in leſs than an hour the fire was totally extinguiſhed, without having done any other damage than that of conſuming about two yards of the wooden gallery.

All this time our young gentleman cloſely attended his fair charge, each of whom had ſwooned with apprehenſion; but as their conſtitutions were good, and their ſpirits not eaſily diſſipated, when upon reflection they found themſelves and their company ſafe, and that the flames were happily quenched, the tumult of their fears ſubſided,

ſided, they put on their cloaths, recovered their good humour, and began to rally each other on the trim in which they had been ſecured. Sophy obſerved, that now Mr. Pickle had an indiſputable claim to her couſin's affection; and therefore ſhe ought to lay aſide all affected reſerve for the future, and frankly avow the ſentiments of her heart. Emily retorted the argument, putting her in mind, that by the ſame claim Mr. Pipes was intitled to the like return from her. Her friend admitted the force of the concluſion, provided ſhe could not find means of ſatisfying her deliverer in another ſhape; and turning to the valet, who happened to be preſent, aſked if his heart was not otherwiſe engaged? Tom, who did not conceive the meaning of the queſtion, ſtood ſilent according to cuſtom; and the interrogation being repeated, anſwered with a grin, "Heart-whole as a biſcuit, I'll aſſure you, Miſtreſs." "What? (ſaid Emilia) have you never been in love, Thomas?" "Yes, forſcoth, (replied the valet without heſitation) ſometimes of a morning." Peregrine could not help laughing, and his miſtreſs looked a little diſconcerted at this blunt repartee; while Sophy ſlipping a purſe into his hand, told him there was ſomething to purchaſe a periwig. Tom having conſulted his maſter's eyes, refuſed the preſent, ſaying, "No, thank ye as much as if I did." And though ſhe inſiſted upon his putting it in his pocket, as a ſmall teſtimony of her gratitude, he could not be prevailed upon to avail himſelf of her generoſity; but following her to the other end of the room, thruſt it into her ſleeve without ceremony, exclaiming, "I'll be damned to hell if I do." Peregrine having checked him for his booriſh be-

behaviour, ſent him out of the room, and begged that Miſs Sophy would not endeavour to debauch the morals of his ſervant, who, rough and uncultivated as he was, had ſenſe enough to perceive that he had no pretenſion to any ſuch acknowledgment. But ſhe argued with great vehemence, that ſhe ſhould never be able to make an acknowledgment adequate to the ſervice he had done her, and that ſhe ſhould never be perfectly eaſy in her own mind, until ſhe found ſome opportunity of manifeſting the ſenſe ſhe had of the obligation: "I do not pretend (ſaid ſhe) to reward Mr. Pipes; but I ſhall be abſolutely unhappy, unleſs I am allowed to give him ſome token of my regard."

Peregrine, thus earneſtly ſolicited, deſired that ſince ſhe was bent upon diſplaying her generoſity, ſhe would not beſtow upon him any pecuniary gratification, but honour him with ſome trinket, as a mark of conſideration; becauſe he himſelf had ſuch a particular value for the fellow, on account of his attachment and fidelity, that he ſhould be ſorry to ſee him treated on the footing of a common mercenary domeſtick.

There was not one jewel in the poſſeſſion of this grateful young lady, that ſhe would not have gladly given as a recompence, or badge of diſtinction to her reſcuer; but his maſter pitched upon a ſeal-ring of no great value that hung at her watch, and Pipes being called in, had permiſſion to accept that teſtimony of Miſs Sophy's favour. Tom received it accordingly with ſundry ſcrapes, and having kiſſed it with great devotion, put it on his little finger, and ſtrutted off, extremely proud of his acquiſition.

Emilia, with a moſt enchanting ſweetneſs of aſpect, told her lover, that he had inſtructed her how to behave towards him; and taking a diamond ring from her finger, deſired he would wear it for her ſake. He received the pledge as became him, and preſented another in exchange, which ſhe at firſt refuſed, alledging that it would deſtroy the intent of her acknowledgment; but Peregrine aſſured her, he had accepted her jewel, not as a proof of her gratitude, but as the mark of her love; and that if ſhe refuſed a mutual token, he ſhould look upon himſelf as the object of her diſdain. Her eyes kindled, and her cheeks glowed with reſentment at this impudent intimation, which ſhe conſidered as an unſeaſonable inſult; and the young gentleman perceiving her emotion, ſtood corrected for his temerity, and aſked pardon for the liberty of his remonſtrance, which he hoped ſhe would aſcribe to the prevalence of that principle alone, which he had always taken pride in avowing.

Sophy ſeeing him diſconcerted, interpoſed in his behalf, and chid her couſin for having practiſed ſuch unneceſſary affectation; upon which Emilia, ſoftened into compliance, held out her finger as a ſignal of her condeſcenſion. Peregrine put on the ring with great eagerneſs, mumbled her ſoft white hand in an extaſy which would not allow him to confine his embraces to that limb, but urged him to ſeize her by the waiſt, and ſnatch a delicious kiſs from her love-pouting lips; nor would he leave her a butt to the ridicule of Sophy, on whoſe mouth he inſtantly committed a rape of the ſame nature; ſo that the two friends, countenanced by each other, reprehended him with ſuch gentleneſs of rebuke,

rebuke, that he was almoſt tempted to repeat the offence.

The morning being now lighted up, and the ſervants of the inn on foot, he ordered ſome chocolate for breakfaſt, and at the deſire of the ladies, ſent Pipes to ſee the horſes fed, and the chariot prepared, while he went to the bar, and diſcharged the bill.

Theſe meaſures being taken, they ſet out about five o'clock, and having refreſhed themſelves and their cattle at another inn on the road, proceeded in the afternoon. Without meeting with any other accident, they ſafely arrived at the place of their deſtination, where Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her joy at ſeeing her old friend Mr. Pickle, whom, however, ſhe kindly reproached for the long diſcontinuance of his regard. Without explaining the cauſe of that interruption, he proteſted that his love and eſteem had never been diſcontinued, and that for the future he ſhould omit no occaſion of teſtifying how much he had her friendſhip at heart. She then made him acquainted with her ſon, who at that time was in the houſe, being excuſed from his duty by furlow.

This young man, whoſe name was Godfrey, was about the age of twenty, of a middling ſize, vigorous make, remarkably well ſhaped, and the ſcars of the ſmall pox, of which he bore a good number, added a peculiar manlineſs to the air of his countenance. His capacity was good, and his diſpoſition naturally frank and eaſy; but he had been a ſoldier from his infancy, and his education was altogether in the military ſtile. He looked upon taſte and letters as meer pedantry, beneath the conſideration of a gentleman, and

every

every civil ſtation of life as mean, when compared with the profeſſion of arms. He had made great progreſs in the gymnaſtic ſciences of dancing, fencing and riding, played perfectly well on the German flute, and above all things valued himſelf upon a ſcrupulous obſervance of all the points of honour.

Had Peregrine and he conſidered themſelves upon equal footing, in all probability they would have immediately entered into a league of intimacy and friendſhip; but this ſufficient ſoldier looked upon his ſiſter's admirer as a young ſtudent raw from the univerſity, and utterly ignorant of mankind; while ſquire Pickle beheld Godfrey in the light of a needy volunteer, greatly inferior to himſelf in fortune, as well as every other accompliſhment. This mutual miſunderſtanding could not fail of producing animoſities. The very next day after Peregrine's arrival, ſome ſharp repartees paſſed between them in preſence of the ladies, before whom each endeavoured to aſſert his own ſuperiority. In theſe conteſts our hero never failed of obtaining the victory, becauſe his genius was more acute, and his talents better cultivated than thoſe of his antagoniſt, who therefore took umbrage at his ſucceſs, became jealous of his reputation, and began to treat him with marks of ſcorn and diſreſpect.

His ſiſter ſaw, and dreading the conſequence of his ferocity, not only took him to taſk in private for his impolite behaviour, but alſo intreated her lover to make allowances for the roughneſs of her brother's education. He kindly aſſured her, that whatever pains it might coſt him to vanquiſh his own impetuous temper, he would

for

for her ſake endure all the mortifications to which her brother's arrogance might expoſe him; and after having ſtayed with her two days, and enjoyed ſeveral private interviews, during which he acted the part of a moſt paſſionate lover, he took his leave of Mrs. Gauntlet over-night, and told the young laides he would call early next morning to bid them farewel. He did not neglect this piece of duty, and found the two friends and breakfaſt already prepared in the parlour. All three being extremely affected with the thoughts of parting, a moſt pathetic ſilence for ſome time prevailed, till Peregrine put an end to it by lamenting his fate, in being obliged to exile himſelf ſo long from the dear object of his moſt intereſting wiſh. He begged with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that ſhe would now, in conſideration of the cruel abſence he muſt ſuffer, give him the conſolation which ſhe had hitherto refuſed, namely, that of knowing he poſſeſſed a place within her heart. The confidante ſeconded his requeſt, repreſenting that it was now no time to diſguiſe her ſentiments, when her lover was about to leave the kingdom, and might be in danger of contracting other connexions, unleſs he was confirmed in his conſtancy, by knowing how far he could depend upon her love; and in ſhort, ſhe was plied with ſuch irreſiſtible importunities, that ſhe anſwered in the utmoſt confuſion, "Tho' I have avoided literal acknowledgments, methinks the circumſtances of my behaviour might have convinced Mr. Pickle, that I do not regard him as a common acquaintance." "My charming Emily! (cried the impatient lover, throwing himſelf at her feet) why will you deal out my happineſs in ſuch ſcanty

portions? Why will you thus mince the declaration which would overwhelm me with pleaſure, and chear my lonely reflection, while I ſigh amid the ſolitude of ſeparation?" His fair miſtreſs, melted by this image, replied, with the tears guſhing from her eyes, "I'm afraid I ſhall feel that ſeparation more ſeverely than you imagine." Tranſported at this flattering confeſſion, he preſſed her to his breaſt, and while her head reclined upon his neck, mingled his tears with hers in great abundance, breathing the moſt tender vows of eternal fidelity. The gentle heart of Sophy could not bear this ſcene unmoved; ſhe wept with ſympathy, and encouraged the lovers to reſign themſelves to the will of fate, and ſupport their ſpirits with the hope of meeting again on happier terms. Finally, after mutual promiſes, exhortations and endearments, Peregrine took his leave, his heart being ſo full, that he could ſcarce pronounce the word "*Adieu!*" and mounting his horſe at the door, ſet out with Pipes for the garriſon.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Peregrine *is overtaken by Mr.* Gauntlet, *with whom he fights a duel, and contracts an intimate friendſhip. He arrives at the garriſon, and finds his mother as implacable as ever. He is inſulted by his brother* Gam, *whoſe preceptor he diſciplines with a horſe-whip.*

IN order to expel the melancholy images that took poſſeſſion of his fancy, at parting from his miſtreſs, he called in the flattering ideas of thoſe pleaſures he expected to enjoy in France; and

and before he had rode ten miles, his imagination was effectually amuſed.

While he thus proſecuted his travels by anticipation, and indulged himſelf in all the inſolence of hope, at the turning of a lane he was all of a ſudden overtaken by Emilia's brother on horſeback, who told him he was riding the ſame way, and ſhould be glad of his company.

This young gentleman, whether prompted by perſonal pique, or actuated with zeal for the honour of his family, had followed our hero, with a view of obliging him to explain the nature of his attachment to his ſiſter. Peregrine returned his compliment with ſuch diſdainful civility, as gave him room to believe that he ſuſpected his errand; and therefore, without further preamble, he declared his buſineſs in theſe words: "Mr. Pickle, you have carried on a correſpondence with my ſiſter for ſome time, and I ſhould be glad to know the nature of it." To this queſtion our lover replied, "Sir, I ſhould be glad to know what title you have to damand that ſatisfaction?" "Sir (anſwered the other) I demand it in the capacity of a brother, jealous of his own honour, as well as of his ſiſter's reputation, and if your intentions are honourable, you will not refuſe it?" "Sir, (ſaid Peregrine) I am not at preſent diſpoſed to appeal to your opinion for the rectitude of my intentions; and I think you aſſume a little too much importance, in pretending to judge my conduct." "Sir, (replied the ſoldier) I pretend to judge the conduct of every man who interferes with my concerns, and even to chaſtiſe him, if I think he acts amiſs." "Chaſtiſe! (cried the youth with indignation in his looks) ſure you

dare not apply that term to me?" "You are miſtaken (ſaid Godfrey) I dare do any thing that becomes the character of a gentleman." "Gentleman, God wot! (replied the other, looking contemptuouſly at his equipage, which was none of the moſt ſuperb) a very pretty gentleman, truly!" The ſoldier's wrath was inflamed by this ironical repetition, the contempt of which his conſcious poverty made him feel; and he called his antagoniſt preſumptuous boy, inſolent upſtart, with other epithets, which Perry retorted with great bitterneſs. A formal challenge having paſſed between them, they alighted at the firſt inn, and walked into the next field, in order to decide their quarrel by the ſword. Having pitched upon the ſpot, helped to pull off each other's boots, and laid aſide their coats and waiſtcoats, Mr. Gauntlet told his opponent, that he himſelf was looked upon in the army as an expert ſwordſman, and that if Mr. Pickle had not made that ſcience his particular ſtudy, they ſhould be upon a more equal footing in uſing piſtols. Peregrine was too much incenſed to thank him for his plain dealing, and too confident of his own ſkill to reliſh the other's propoſal, which he accordingly rejected: then drawing his ſword, he obſerved, that were he to treat Mr. Gauntlet according to his deſerts he would order his man to puniſh his audacity with an horſe-whip. Exaſperated at this expreſſion, which he conſidered as an indelible affront, he made no reply, but attacked his adverſary with equal ferocity and addreſs. The youth parried his firſt and ſecond thruſt, but received the third in the outſide of his ſword arm. Though the wound was ſuperficial, he was tranſported with rage at ſight of his

his own blood, and returned the aſſault with ſuch fury and precipitation, that Gauntlet, loth to take advantage of his unguarded heat, ſtood upon the defenſive. In the ſecond longe, Peregrine's weapon entering a kind of net work in the ſhell of Godfrey's ſword, the blade ſnapped in two, and left him at the mercy of the ſoldier, who, far from making an inſolent uſe of the victory he had gained, put up his Toledo with great deliberation, like a man who had been uſed to that kind of rencounters, obſerved that ſuch a blade as Peregrine's was not to be truſted with a man's life: then adviſing the owner to treat a gentleman in diſtreſs with more reſpect for the future, he ſlipped on his boots, and with ſullen dignity of demeanour ſtalked back to the inn.

Though Pickle was extremely mortified at his miſcarriage in this adventure, he was alſo ſtruck with the behaviour of his antagoniſt, which affected him the more, as he underſtood that Godfrey's *fierté* had proceeded from the jealous ſenſibility of a gentleman declined into the vale of misfortune. Gauntlet's valour and moderation induced him to put a favourable conſtruction on all thoſe circumſtances of that young ſoldier's conduct, which before had given him diſguſt. Though in any other caſe he would have induſtriouſly avoided the leaſt appearance of ſubmiſſion, he followed his conqueror to the inn, with a view of thanking him for his generous forbearance, and of ſoliciting his friendſhip and correſpondence.

Godfrey had his foot in the ſtirrup to mount, when Peregrine coming up to him, deſired he would defer his departure for a quarter of an

hour, and favour him with a little private converſation. The ſoldier, who miſtook the meaning of the requeſt, immediately quitted his horſe, and followed Pickle into a chamber, where he expected to find a brace of piſtols loaded on the table; but he was very agreeably deceived, when our hero, in the moſt reſpectful terms, acknowledged his noble deportment in the field, owned that till then he had miſunderſtood his character, and begged that he would honour him with his intimacy and correſpondence.

Gauntlet, who had ſeen undoubted proofs of Peregrine's courage, which had conſiderably raiſed him in his eſteem, and had ſenſe enough to perceive that this conceſſion was not owing to any ſordid or ſiniſter motive, embraced his offer with demonſtrations of infinite ſatisfaction. When he underſtood the terms on which Mr. Pickle was with his ſiſter, he proffered his ſervice in his turn, either as agent, mediator, or confidant: nay, to give this new friend a convincing proof of his ſincerity, he diſcloſed to him a paſſion which he had for ſome time entertained for his couſin Miſs Sophy, though he durſt not reveal his ſentiments to her father, leſt he ſhould be offended at his preſumption, and withdraw his protection from the family.

Peregrine's generous heart was wrung with anguiſh, when he underſtood that this young gentleman, who was the only ſon of a diſtinguiſhed officer, had carried arms for the ſpace of five years, without being able to obtain a ſubaltern's commiſſion, though he had always behaved with remarkable regularity and ſpirit, and acquired the friendſhip and eſteem of all the officers under whom he had ſerved.

He

He would, at that time, with the utmoſt pleaſure have ſhared his finances with him; but as he would not run the riſk of offending the young ſoldier's delicacy of honour, by a premature exertion of his liberality, he reſolved to inſinuate himſelf into an intimacy with him, before he would venture to take ſuch freedoms; and with that view preſſed Mr. Gauntlet to accompany him to the gariſon, where he did not doubt of having influence enough to make him a welcome gueſt. Godfrey thanked him very courteouſly for his invitation, which he ſaid he could not immediately accept, but promiſed if he would favour him with a letter, and fix the time at which he propoſed to ſet out for France, he would endeavour to viſit him at the commodore's habitation, and from thence give him a convoy to Dover. This new treaty being ſettled, and a doſſil of lint with a ſnip of plaiſter applied to our adventurer's wound, he parted from the brother of his dear Emilia, to whom and his friend Sophy he ſent his kindeſt wiſhes; and having lodged one night upon the road, arrived next day in the afternoon at the gariſon, where he found all his friends in good health, and overjoyed at his return.

The commodore, who was by this time turned of ſeventy, and altogether crippled by the gout, ſeldom went abroad; and as his converſation was not very entertaining, had but little company within doors; ſo that his ſpirits muſt have quite ſtagnated, had not they been kept in motion by the converſation of Hatchway, and received at different times a wholeſome fillip from the diſcipline of his ſpouſe, who, by the force of pride, religion and Coniac, had erected a moſt terrible tyranny in the houſe. There was ſuch a quick

circulation of domeſticks in the family, that every ſuit of livery had been worn by figures of all dimenſions: Trunnion himſelf had long before this time yielded to the torrent of her arbitrary ſway; though not without divers obſtinate efforts to maintain his liberty; and now, that he was diſabled by his infirmities, when he uſed to hear his empreſs ſinging the loud Orthyan ſong among the ſervants below, he would often in whiſpers communicate to the lieutenant hints of what he would do if ſo be as how he was not deprived of the uſe of his precious limbs. Hatchway was the only perſon whom the temper of Mrs. Trunnion reſpected, either becauſe ſhe dreaded his ridicule, or looked upon his perſon with eyes of affection. This being the ſituation of things in the gariſon, it is not to be doubted that the old gentleman highly enjoyed the preſence of Peregrine, who found means to ingratiate himſelf ſo effectually with his aunt, that while he remained at home, ſhe ſeemed to have exchanged the diſpoſition of a tygreſs, for that of a gentle kid: but he found his own mother as implacable, and his father as much hen-pecked as ever.

Gamaliel, who now very ſeldom enjoyed the converſation of his old friend the commodore, had ſome time ago entered into an amicable ſociety, conſiſting of the barber, apothecary, attorney and exciſeman of the pariſh, among whom he uſed to ſpend the evening at Tunley's, and liſten to their diſputes upon philoſophy and politicks, with great comfort and edification, while his ſovereign lady domineered at home as uſual, viſited with great pomp in the neighbourhood, and employed her chief care in the education of her darling ſon Gam, who was now in the fifteenth

teenth year of his age, and ſo remarkable for his perverſe diſpoſition, that in ſpite of his mother's influence and authority, he was not only hated, but alſo deſpiſed both at home and abroad. She had put him under the tuition of the curate, who lived in the family, and was obliged to attend him in all his exerciſes and excurſions. This governor was a low-bred fellow, who had neither experience nor ingenuity, but poſſeſſed a large fund of adulation and ſervile complaiſance, by which he had gained the good graces of Mrs. Pickle, and preſided over all her deliberations in the ſame manner as his ſuperior managed thoſe of Mrs. Trunnion.

He had one day rode out to take the air with his pupil, who, as I have already obſerved, was odious to the poor people, for having killed their dogs and broken their incloſures, and on account of his hump, diſtinguiſhed by the title of My lord; when in a narrow lane they chanced to meet Peregrine on horſeback.

The young ſquire no ſooner perceived his elder brother, for whom he had been inſtructed to entertain the moſt inveterate grudge, than he reſolved to inſult him *en paſſant*, and actually rode againſt him full gallop. Our hero gueſſing his aim, fixed himſelf in his ſtirrups, and by a dexterous management of the reins, avoided the ſhock in ſuch a manner, as that their legs only ſhould encounter, by which means my lord was tilted out of his ſaddle, and in a twinkling laid ſprawling in the dirt. The governor, enraged at the diſgrace of his charge, advanced with great inſolence and fury, and ſtruck at Peregrine with his whip. Nothing could be more agreeable to our young gentleman than this aſſault, which fur-

niſhed him with an opportunity of chaſtiſing an officious wretch, whoſe petulance and malice he had longed to puniſh. He therefore, ſpurring up his horſe towards his antagoniſt, overthrew him in the middle of a hedge. Before he had time to recollect himſelf from the confuſion of the fall, Pickle alighted in a trice, and exerciſed his horſe-whip with ſuch agility about the curate's face and ears, that he was fain to proſtrate himſelf before his enraged conqueror, and implore his forbearance in the moſt abject terms. While Peregrine was thus employed, his brother Gam had made ſhift to riſe, and attack him in the rear; for which reaſon, when the tutor was quelled, the victor faced about, ſnatched the weapon out of his hand, and having broken it to pieces, remounted his horſe, and rode off, without deigning to honour him with any other notice.

The condition in which they returned produced infinite clamour againſt the conqueror, who was repreſented as a ruffian who had lain in ambuſh to make away with his brother, in whoſe defence the curate was ſaid to have received thoſe cruel ſtripes, that hindred him from appearing for three whole weeks in the performance of his duty at church.

Complaints were made to the commodore, who having inquired into the circumſtances of the affair, approved of what his nephew had done; adding, with many oaths, that, provided Peregrine had been out of the ſcrape, he wiſhed Crook back had broke his neck in the fall.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

He projects a plan of revenge, which is executed againſt the curate.

OUR hero, exaſperated at the villainy of the curate, in the treacherous miſrepreſentation he had made of this rencounter, determined to practice upon him a method of revenge, which ſhould be not only effectual, but alſo unattended with any bad conſequence to himſelf. For this purpoſe he and Hatchway, to whom he imparted his plan, went to the ale houſe one evening, and called for an empty room, knowing there was no other but that which they had choſen for the ſcene of action. This apartment was a ſort of a parlour that fronted the kitchen, with a window towards the yard; where, after they had ſat ſome time, the lieutenant found means to amuſe the landlord in diſcourſe, while Peregrine ſtepping out into the yard, by the talent of mimickry, which he poſſeſſed in a ſurpriſing degree, counterfeited a dialogue between the curate and Tunley's wife. This reaching the ears of the publican, for whoſe hearing it was calculated, inflamed his naturally jealous diſpoſition to ſuch a degree, that he could not conceal his emotion, but made an hundred efforts to quit the room; while the lieutenant, ſmoaking his pipe with great gravity, as if he neither heard what paſſed, nor took notice of the landlord's diſorder, detained him on the ſpot by a ſucceſſion of queſtions which he could not refuſe to anſwer; though he ſtood ſweating with agony all the time, ſtretching his neck every inſtant towards the window thro'

which the voices were conveyed, ſcratching his head, and exhibiting ſundry other ſymptoms of impatience and agitation. At length, the ſuppoſed converſation came to ſuch a pitch of amorous complaiſance, that the huſband, quite frantic with his imaginary diſgrace, ruſhed out at the door, crying "Coming, Sir." But, as he was obliged to make a circuit round one half of the houſe, Peregrine had got in by the window, before Tunley arrived in the yard.

According to the feigned intelligence he had received, he ran directly to the barn, in expectation of making ſome very extraordinary diſcovery; and having employed ſome minutes in rummaging the ſtraw to no purpoſe, returned in a ſtate of diſtraction to the kitchen, juſt as his wife chanced to enter at the other door. The circumſtance of her appearance confirmed him in the opinion that the deed was done. As the diſeaſe of being hen-peck'd was epidemic in the pariſh, he durſt not expreſs the leaſt hint of his uneaſineſs to her, but reſolved to take vengeance on the libidinous prieſt, who, he imagined, had corrupted the chaſtity of his ſpouſe.

The two confederates, in order to be certified that their ſcheme had taken effect, as well as to blow up the flame which they had kindled, called for Tunley, in whoſe countenance they could eaſily diſcern his confuſion. Peregrine deſiring him to ſit down and drink a glaſs with them, began to interrogate him about his family, and among other things, aſked him how long he had been married to that handſome wife? This queſtion, which was put with an arch ſignificance of look, alarmed the publican, who began to fear that Pickle had overheard his diſhonour; and this

this ſuſpicion was not at all removed, when the lieutenant, with a ſly regard, pronounced, "Tunley, wan't you nooſed by the curate?" "Yes, I was," (replied the landlord, with an eagerneſs and perplexity of tone, as if he thought the lieutenant knew, that *thereby hung a tale*;) and Hatchway ſupported this ſuſpicion, by anſwering, "Nay, as for that matter, the curate may be a very ſufficient man in his way." This tranſition from his wife to the curate, convinced him that his ſhame was known to his gueſts; and in the tranſport of his indignation, he pronounced with great emphaſis, "A ſufficient man! Odds heart! I believe they are all wolves in ſheep's cloathing. I wiſh to God I could ſee the day, maſter, when there ſhall not be a prieſt, an exciſeman, or a cuſtom-houſe officer in this kingdom. As for that fellow of a curate, if I do catch him——It don't ſignify talking——But, by the Lord!——Gentlemen my ſervice to you."

The aſſociates being ſatisfied by theſe abrupt inſinuations, that they had ſo far ſucceeded in their aim, waited with impatience two or three days in expectation of hearing that Tunley had fallen upon ſome method of being revenged for this imaginary wrong: but finding that either his invention was too ſhallow, or his inclination too languid to gratify their deſire of his own accord, they determined to bring the affair to ſuch a criſis, that he ſhould not be able to withſtand the opportunity of executing his vengeance. With this view, they one evening hired a boy to run to Mr. Pickle's houſe, and tell the curate, that Mrs. Tunley being taken ſuddenly ill, her huſband deſired he would come immediately, and pray with her. Mean while, they had taken

poſſeſſion of a room in the houſe; and Hatchway engaging the landlord in converſation, Peregrine in his return from the yard, obſerved, as if by accident, that the parſon was gone into the kitchen, in order, as he ſuppoſed, to catechiſe Tunley's wife.

The publican ſtarted at this intelligence, and under pretence of ſerving another company in the next room, went out to the barn, where arming himſelf with a flail, he repaired to a lane thro' which the curate was under a neceſſity of paſſing in his way home. There he lay in ambuſh, with fell intent; and when the ſuppoſed author of his ſhame arrived, greeted him in the dark with ſuch a ſalutation, as forced him to ſtagger backward three paces at leaſt. If the ſecond application had taken effect, in all probability that ſpot would have been the boundary of the parſon's mortal peregrination; but, luckily for him, his antagoniſt was not expert in the management of his weapon, which by a twiſt of the thong that connected the legs, inſtead of pitching upon the head of the aſtoniſhed curate, deſcended in an oblique direction on his own pate, with ſuch a ſwing, that the ſkull actually rung like an apothecary's mortar, and ten thouſand lights ſeemed to dance before his eyes. The curate recollecting himſelf during the reſpite he obtained from this accident, and believing his aggreſſor to be ſome thief who lurked in that place for prey, reſolved to make a running fight, until he ſhould arrive within cry of his habitation. With this deſign he raiſed up his cudgel for the defence of his head, and betaking himſelf to his heels, began to roar for help with the lungs of a Stentor. Tunley throwing away the flail, which he durſt no longer truſt with

with the execution of his revenge, purſued the fugitive with all the ſpeed he could exert; and the other, either unnerv'd by fear, or ſtumbling over a ſtone, was overtaken before he had run an hundred paces. He no ſooner felt the wind of the publican's fiſt that whiſtled round his ears, than he fell flat upon the earth at full length, and the cudgel flew from his unclaſping hand; when Tunley ſpringing like a tyger upon his back, rained ſuch a ſhower of blows upon his carcaſe, that he imagined himſelf under the diſcipline of ten pair of fiſts at leaſt; yet the imaginary cuckold, not ſatisfied with annoying the prieſt in this manner, laid hold on one of his ears with his teeth, and bit ſo unmercifully, that the curate was found almoſt intranced with pain by two labourers, at whoſe approach the aſſailant retreated unperceived.

The lieutenant had poſted himſelf at the window, in order to ſee the landlord at his firſt return; and no ſooner perceived him enter the yard, than he called him into the apartment, impatient to learn the effects of their ſtratagem. Tunley obeyed the ſummons, and appeared before his gueſts in all the violence of rage, diſorder and fatigue; his noſtrils were dilated more than one half beyond their natural capacity, his eyes rolled, his teeth chattered, he ſnored in breathing as if he had been oppreſſed by the night-mare, and ſtreams of ſweat flowed down each ſide of his forehead.

Peregrine affecting to ſtart at the approach of ſuch an uncouth figure, aſked if he had been wreſtling with a ſpirit; upon which he anſwered with great vehemence, "Spirit! No, no, maſter, I have had a roll and tumble with the fleſh.

A dog! I'll teach him to come a caterwauling about my doors." Gueſſing from this reply, that his aim was accompliſhed, and curious to know the particulars of the rencounter, "Well then, (ſaith the youth) I hope you have prevailed againſt the fleſh, Tunley." "Yes, yes, (anſwered the publican) I have cooled his capiſſens, as the ſaying is: I have played ſuch a tune about his ears, that I'll be bound he ſhan't long for muſic this month. A goatiſh ram-fac'd raſcal! Why, he's a perfect pariſh bull, as I hope to live."

Hatchway obſerving that he ſeemed to have made a ſtout battle, deſired he would ſit down and recover wind; and after he had ſwallowed a brace of bumpers, his vanity prompted him to expatiate upon his own exploit in ſuch a manner, that the confederates, without ſeeming to know the curate was his antagoniſt, became acquainted with every circumſtance of the ambuſcade.

Tunley had ſcarce got the better of his agitation, when his wife entering the room, told them by way of news, that ſome waggiſh body had ſent Mr. Sackbut the curate to pray with her. This name inflamed the huſband's choler anew, and forgetting all his complaiſance for his ſpouſe, he replied with a rancorous grin, "Add rabbit him! I doubt not but you found his admonitions deadly comfortable!" The landlady looking at her vaſſal with a ſovereign aſpect, "What crotchets (ſaid ſhe) have you got in your fool's head, I trow? I know no buſineſs you have to ſit here like a gentleman with your arms akimbo, when there's another company in the houſe to be ſerved." The ſubmiſſive huſband took the hint, and, without further expoſtulation, ſneaked out of the room.

Next

Next day it was reported, that Mr. Sackbut had been way-led, and almoſt murdered by robbers, and an advertiſement was paſted upon the church-door, offering a reward to any perſon that ſhould diſcover the aſſaſſin; but he reaped no ſatisfaction from this expedient, and was confined to his chamber a whole fortnight, by the bruiſes he had received.

CHAP. XXX.

Mr. Sackbut *and his pupil conſpire againſt* Peregrine, *who being apprized of their deſign by his ſiſter, takes meaſures for counterworking their ſcheme, which is executed by miſtake upon Mr.* Gauntlet. *This young ſoldier meets with a cordial reception from the commodore, who generouſly decoys him into his own intereſt.*

WHEN he conſidered the circumſtances of the ambuſcade, he could not perſuade himſelf that he had been aſſaulted by a common thief, becauſe it was not to be ſuppoſed that a robber would have amuſed himſelf in pummeling rather than in rifling his prey; he therefore aſcribed his misfortune to the ſecret enmity of ſome perſon who had a deſign upon his life; and upon mature deliberation, fixed his ſuſpicion upon Peregrine, who was the only man on earth from whom he thought he deſerved ſuch treatment. He communicated his conjecture to his pupil, who readily adopted his opinion, and adviſed him ſtrenuouſly to revenge the wrong by a like contrivance, without ſeeking to make a nar-

narrower inquiry, leſt his enemy ſhould be thereby put upon his guard.

This propoſal being reliſhed, they in concert revolved the means of retorting the ambuſh with intereſt, and actually laid ſuch a villainous plan for attacking our hero in the dark, that, had it been executed according to their intention, the young gentleman's ſcheme of travelling would have been effectually marred. But their machinations were overheard by Miſs Pickle, who was now in the ſeventeenth year of her age, and, in ſpite of the prejudice of education, entertained in ſecret a moſt ſiſterly affection for her brother Perry, though ſhe had never ſpoke to him, and was deterred by the precepts, vigilance and menaces of her mother, from attempting any means of meeting him in private. She was not, however, inſenſible to his praiſe, which was loudly ſounded forth in the neighbourhood, and never failed of going to church, and every other place, where ſhe thought ſhe might have an opportunity of ſeeing this amiable brother. With theſe ſentiments it cannot be ſuppoſed that ſhe would hear the conſpiracy without emotion. She was ſhocked at the treacherous barbarity of Gam, and ſhuddered at the proſpect of the danger to which Peregine would be expoſed from their malice. She durſt not communicate this plot to her mother, becauſe ſhe was afraid that lady's unaccountable averſion for her firſt born would hinder her from interpoſing in his behalf, and conſequently render her a ſort of accomplice in the guilt of his aſſaſſins. She therefore reſolved to warn Peregrine of the conſpiracy, an account of which ſhe tranſmitted to him in an affectionate letter, by means of a young gentleman in that neighbourhood,

hood, who made his addreſſes to her at that time, and who, at her requeſt, offered his ſervice to our hero, in defeating the projects of his adverſaries.

Peregrine was ſtartled when he read the particulars of their ſcheme, which was no other than an intention to ſally upon him when he ſhould be altogether unprovided againſt ſuch an attack, cut off his ears, and otherwiſe mutilate him in ſuch a manner, that he ſhould have no cauſe to be vain of his perſon for the future.

Incenſed as he was againſt the brutal diſpoſition of his own father's ſon, he could not help being moved at the integrity and tenderneſs of his ſiſter, of whoſe inclinations towards him he had been hitherto kept in ignorance. He thanked the gentleman for his honourable dealing, and expreſſed a deſire of being better acquainted with his virtues; told him, that now he was cautioned, he hoped there would be no neceſſity for giving him any further trouble, and wrote by him a letter of acknowledgment to his ſiſter, for whom he expreſſed the utmoſt love and regard, beſeeching her to favour him with an interview before his departure, that he might indulge his fraternal fondneſs, and be bleſſed with the company and countenance of one at leaſt belonging to his own family.

Having imparted this diſcovery to his friend Hatchway, they came to a reſolution of countermining the plan of their enemies. As they did not chooſe to expoſe themſelves to the inſinuations of ſlander, which would have exerted itſelf at their expence, had they, even in defending themſelves, employed any harſh means of retaliation, they invented a method of diſappointing and diſgracing their foes, and immediately

diately ſet Pipes at work to forward the preparations.

Miſs Pickle having deſcribed the ſpot which the aſſaſſins had pitched upon for the ſcene of their vengeance; our triumvirate intended to have placed a centinel among the corn, who ſhould come and give them intelligence when the ambuſcade was laid; and in conſequence of that information, they would ſteal ſoftly towards the place, attended by three or four of the domeſtics, and draw a large net over the conſpirators, who being intangled in the toil, ſhould be diſarmed, fettered, heartily ſcourged, and ſuſpended between two trees in the ſnare, as a ſpectacle to all paſſengers that ſhould chance to travel that way.

The plan being thus digeſted, and the commodore made acquainted with the whole affair, the ſpy was ſent upon duty, and every body within doors prepared to go forth upon the firſt notice. One whole evening did they ſpend in the moſt impatient expectation, but on the ſecond the ſcout crept into the gariſon, and aſſured them that he had perceived three men ſkulking behind the hedge, on the road that led to the public houſe from which Peregrine and the lieutenant uſed every night to return about that hour. Upon this intelligence the confederates ſet out immediately with all their implements. Approaching the ſcene with as little noiſe as poſſible, they heard the ſound of blows; and though the night was dark, perceived a ſort of tumultuous conflict on the very ſpot which the conſpirators had poſſeſſed. Surpriſed at this occurrence, the meaning of which he could not comprehend, Peregrine ordered his myrmidons

to

to halt and reconnoitre; and immediately his ears were ſaluted with an exclamation of "You ſhan't 'ſcape me, raſcal." The voice being quite familiar to him, he all at once divined the cauſe of that confuſion which they had obſerved; and running up to the aſſiſtance of the exclaimer, found a fellow on his knees begging his life of Mr. Gauntlet, who ſtood over him with a naked hanger in his hand.

Pickle inſtantly made himſelf known to his friend, who told him, that having left his horſe at Tunley's, he was in his way to the gariſon ſet upon by three ruffians, one of whom being the very individual perſon now in his power, had come behind him, and ſtruck with a bludgeon at his head, which however he miſſed, and the inſtrument deſcended on his left ſhoulder; that upon drawing his hanger, and laying about him in the dark, the other two fled, leaving their companion, whom he had diſabled, in the lurch.

Peregrine congratulated him upon his ſafety, and having ordered Pipes to ſecure the priſoner, conducted Mr. Gauntlet to the gariſon, where he met with a very hearty reception from the commodore, to whom he was introduced as his nephew's intimate friend; not but that, in all likelihood, he would have abated ſomewhat of his hoſpitality, had he known that he was the brother of Perry's miſtreſs; but her name the old gentleman had never thought of aſking, when he enquired into the particulars of his godſon's amour.

The captive being examined, in preſence of Trunnion and all his adherents, touching the ambuſcade, owned, that being in the ſervice of Gam Pickle, he had been prevailed upon by the ſoli-

ſolicitations of his maſter and the curate, to accompany them in their expedition, and undertake the part which he had acted againſt the ſtranger, whom he and his employers miſtook for Peregrine. In conſideration of this frank acknowledgment, and a ſevere wound he had received in his right arm, they reſolved to inflict no other puniſhment on this malefactor, than to detain him all night in the garriſon, and next morning carry him before a juſtice of the peace, to whom he repeated all that he had ſaid overnight, and with his own hand ſubſcribed his confeſſion, copies of which were handed about the neighbourhood, to the unſpeakable confuſion and diſgrace of the curate and his promiſing pupil.

Mean while Trunnion treated the young ſoldier with uncommon marks of reſpect, being prepoſſeſſed in his favour by this adventure, which he had ſo gallantly atchieved, as well as by the encomiums that Peregrine beſtowed upon his valour and generoſity. He liked his countenance, which was bold and hardy, admired his Herculean limbs, and delighted in aſking queſtions concerning the ſervice he had ſeen.

The day after his arrival, while the converſation turned on this laſt ſubject, the commodore, taking the pipe out of his mouth, "I'll tell you what, brother, (ſaid he) five and forty years ago, when I was third lieutenant of the Warwick man of war, there was a very ſtout young fellow on board, a ſubaltern officer of marines; his name was not unlike your own, d'ye ſee, being Guntlet, with a G. I remember he and I could not abide one another at firſt, becauſe, d'ye ſee, I was a ſailor and he a land-man, till we fell in with a Frenchman, whom we engaged

for eight glaſſes, and at length boarded and took. I was the firſt man that ſtood on the enemy's deck, and ſhould have come ſcurvily off, d'ye ſee, if Guntlet, had not jumped to my aſſiſtance; but we ſoon cleared ſhip, and drove them to cloſe quarters, ſo that they were obliged to ſtrike; and from that day Guntlet and I were ſworn brothers as long as he remained on board. He was exchanged into a marching regiment, and what became of him, afterwards, Lord in heavens knows; but this I'll ſay of him, whether he be dead or alive, he feared no man that ever wore a head, and was, moreover, a very hearty meſſmate."

The ſtranger's breaſt glowed at this eulogium, which was no ſooner pronounced than he eagerly aſked, if the French ſhip was not the Diligence? The commodore replied with a ſtare, "The very ſame, my lad." "Then (ſaid Gauntlet) the perſon of whom you are pleaſed to make ſuch honourable mention was my own father." "The devil he was! (cried Trunnion ſhaking him by the hand) I am rejoiced to ſee a ſon of Ned Guntlet in my houſe."

This diſcovery introduced a thouſand queſtions, in the courſe of which, the old gentleman learnt the ſituation of his friend's family, and diſcharged innumerable execrations upon the ingratitude and injuſtice of the miniſtry, which had failed to provide for the ſon of ſuch a brave ſoldier. Nor was his friendſhip confined to ſuch ineffectual expreſſions; he that ſame evening ſignified to Peregrine a deſire of doing ſomething for his friend. This inclination was ſo much praiſed, encouraged and promoted by his godſon, and even ſupported by his counſellor Hatchway, that our hero

hero was empowered to preſent him with a ſum of money ſufficient to purchaſe a commiſſion.

Though nothing could be more agreeable to Pickle than this permiſſion, he was afraid that Godfrey's ſcrupulous diſpoſition would hinder him from ſubjecting himſelf to any ſuch obligation; and therefore propoſed that he ſhould be decoyed into his own intereſt by a feigned ſtory, in conſequence of which he would be prevailed upon to accept of the money, as a debt which the commodore had contracted of his father at ſea. Trunnion made wry faces at this expedient, the neceſſity of which he could not conceive, without calling in queſtion the common ſenſe of Gauntlet, as he took it for granted, that ſuch offers as thoſe were not to be rejected, on any conſideration whatever. Beſides, he could not digeſt an artifice, by which he himſelf muſt own that he had lived ſo many years, without manifeſting the leaſt intention of doing juſtice to his creditor. All theſe objections, however, were removed by the zeal and rhetoric of Peregrine, who repreſented that it would be impoſſible to befriend him on any other terms; that his ſilence hitherto would be imputed to his want of information touching the circumſtances and conditon of his friend; and that his remembring and inſiſting upon diſcharging the obligation, after ſuch an interval of time, when the whole affair was in oblivion, would be the greateſt compliment he could pay to his own honour and integrity.

Thus perſuaded, he took an opportunity of Gauntlet's being alone with him to broach the affair, telling the young man, that his father had advanced a ſum of money for him, when they ſailed together, on account of the meſs, as well

as

as to ſtop the mouth of a clamorous creditor at Portſmouth; and that the ſaid ſum, with intereſt, amounted to about four hundred pounds, which he would now, with great thankfulneſs, repay.

Godfrey was amazed at this declaration, and after a conſiderable pauſe replied, that he had never heard his parents mention any ſuch debt; that no memorandum or voucher of it was found among his father's papers; and that, in all probability, it muſt have been diſcharged long ago, although the commodore, in ſuch a long courſe of time and hurry of occupation, might have forgot the repayment: he therefore deſired to be excuſed from accepting what in his own conſcience he believed was not his due; and complimented the old gentleman upon his being ſo ſcrupulouſly juſt and honourable.

The ſoldier's refuſal, which was matter of aſtoniſhment to Trunnion, increaſed his inclination to aſſiſt him; and, on pretence of acquitting his own character, he urged his beneficence with ſuch obſtinacy, that Gauntlet, afraid of diſobliging him, was in a manner compelled to receive a draught for the money, for which he ſubſcribed an ample diſcharge, and immediately tranſmitted the order to his mother, whom at the ſame time he informed of the circumſtances by which they had ſo unexpectedly gained this acceſſion of fortune.

Such a piece of news could not fail of being agreeable to Mrs. Gauntlet, who by the firſt poſt wrote a polite letter of acknowledgment to the commodore, another to her own ſon, importing, that ſhe had already ſent the draught to a friend in London, with directions to depoſit it in the

hands of a certain banker, for the purchaſe of the firſt enſigncy to be ſold; and ſhe took the liberty of ſending a third to Peregrine, couched in very affectionate terms, with a kind poſtſcript, ſigned by Miſs Sophy and his charming Emily.

This affair being tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of all concerned, preparations were ſet on foot for the departure of our hero, on whom his uncle ſettled an annuity of eight hundred pounds, being little leſs than one half of his whole income. By this time indeed the old gentleman could eaſily afford to alienate ſuch a part of his fortune, becauſe he entertained little or no company, kept few ſervants, was remarkably plain and frugal in his houſe-keeping; Mrs. Trunnion being now ſome years on the wrong ſide of fifty, her infirmities began to increaſe; and tho' her pride had ſuffered no diminution, her vanity was altogether ſubdued by her avarice.

A Swiſs valet de chambre, who had already made the tour of Europe, was hired for the care of Peregrine's own perſon; Pipes being ignorant of the French language, as well as otherwiſe unfit for the office of a faſhionable attendant, it was reſolved that he ſhould remain in gariſon; and his place was immediately ſupplied by a Pariſian lacquey engaged at London for that purpoſe. Pipes did not ſeem to reliſh this diſpoſition of things; and though he made no verbal objections to it, looked remarkably ſour at his ſucceſſor upon his firſt arrival; but this ſullen fit ſeemed gradually to wear off; and long before his maſter's departure, he had recovered his natural tranquillity and unconcern.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

The two young gentlemen diſplay their talents for gallantry, in the courſe of which they are involved in a ludicrous circumſtance of diſtreſs, and afterwards take vengeance on the author of their miſhap.

MEAN while our hero and his new friend, together with honeſt Jack Hatchway, made daily excurſions into the country, viſited the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, and frequently accompanied them to the chace; all three being exceedingly careſſed on account of their talents, which could accommodate themſelves with great facility to the tempers and turns of their entertainers. The lieutenant was a droll in his way, Peregrine poſſeſſed a great fund of ſprightlineſs and good humour, and Godfrey, among his other qualifications already recited, ſung a moſt excellent ſong; ſo that the company of this triumvirate was courted in all parties, whether male or female; and if the hearts of our young gentlemen had not been pre-engaged, they would have met with opportunities in abundance of diſplaying their addreſs in the art of love; not but that they gave looſe to their gallantry without much intereſting their affections, and amuſed themſelves with little intrigues, which, in the opinion of a man of pleaſure, do not affect his fidelity to the acknowledged ſovereign of his ſoul.

In the midſt of theſe amuſements, our hero received an intimation from his ſiſter, that ſhe ſhould be overjoyed to meet him next day, at

five o'clock in the afternoon, at the houſe of her nurſe, who lived in a cottage hard by her father's habitation, ſhe being debarred from all opportunity of ſeeing him in any other place by the ſeverity of her mother, who ſuſpected her inclination.

He accordingly obeyed the ſummons, and went at the time appointed to the place of rendezvous, where he met this affectionate young lady, who, when he entered the room, ran towards him with all the eagerneſs of tranſport; flung her arms about his neck, and ſhed a flood of tears in his boſom before ſhe could utter one word, except a repetition of My dear, dear brother! He embraced her with all the piety of fraternal tenderneſs, wept over her in his turn, aſſured her that this was one of the happieſt moments of his life, and kindly thanked her for having reſiſted the example, and diſobeyed the injunctions of his mother's unnatural averſion.

He was raviſhed to find by her converſation, that ſhe poſſeſſed a great ſhare of ſenſibility and prudent reflection; for ſhe lamented the infatuation of her parents, with the moſt filial regret, and expreſſed ſuch abhorrence and concern at the villainous diſpoſition of her younger brother, as a humane ſiſter may be ſuppoſed to have entertained. He made her acquainted with all the circumſtances of his own fortune, and as he ſuppoſed ſhe ſpent her time very diſagreeably at home, among characters which muſt be ſhockingly intereſting, profeſſed a deſire of removing her into ſome other ſphere, where ſhe could live with more tranquillity and ſatisfaction.

She objected to this propoſal as an expedient that would infallibly ſubject her to the implacable reſent-

reſentment of her mother, whoſe favour and affection ſhe at preſent enjoyed but in a very inconſiderable degree; and they had canvaſſed divers ſchemes of correſponding for the future, when the voice of Mrs. Pickle was heard at the door.

Miſs July (that was the young lady's name) finding herſelf betrayed, was ſeized with a violent agitation of fear, and Peregrine ſcarce had time to encourage her with a promiſe of protection, before the door of the apartment being flung open, this irreconcileable parent ruſhed in, and with a furious aſpect flew directly at her trembling daughter, when the ſon interpoſing, received the firſt diſcharge of her fury.

Her eyes gleamed with all the rage of indignation, which choaked up her utterance, and ſeemed to convulſe her whole frame; ſhe twiſted her left hand in his hair, and with the other buffeted him about the face, till the blood guſhed from his noſtrils and mouth; while he defended his ſiſter from the cruelty of Gam, who aſſaulted her from another quarter, ſeeing his brother engaged. This attack laſted ſeveral minutes with great violence, till at length Peregrine finding himſelf in danger of being overpowered, if he ſhould remain any longer on the defenſive, laid his brother on his back; then he diſentangled his mother's hand from his own hair, and having puſhed her gently out of the room, bolted the door on the inſide; finally turning to Gam, he threw him out at the window, among a parcel of hogs that fed under it. By this time Julia was almoſt quite diſtracted with terror; ſhe knew ſhe had offended beyond all hope of forgiveneſs, and from that moment conſidered herſelf as an

exile from her father's houſe; in vain did her brother ſtrive to conſole her with freſh proteſtations of love and protection, ſhe counted herſelf extremely miſerable in being obliged to endure the eternal reſentment of a parent with whom ſhe had hitherto lived, and dreaded the cenſure of the world, which from her mother's miſrepreſentation ſhe was ſenſible would condemn her unheard. That ſhe might not however neglect any means in her power of averting this ſtorm, ſhe reſolved to appeaſe, if poſſible, her mother's wrath with humiliation, and even appeal to the influence of her father, weak as it was, before ſhe would deſpair of being forgiven But the good lady ſpared her this unneceſſary application, by telling her through the key-hole, that ſhe muſt never expect to come within her father's door again; for from that hour ſhe renounced her as unworthy of her affection and regard. Julia weeping bitterly, endeavoured to ſoften the rigour of this ſentence, by the moſt ſubmiſſive and reaſonable remonſtrances; but as in her vindication ſhe of neceſſity eſpouſed her elder brother's cauſe, her endeavours inſtead of ſoothing, ſerved only to exaſperate her mother to an higher pitch of indignation, which diſcharged itſelf in invectives againſt Peregrine, whom ſhe reviled with the epithets of a worthleſs abandoned reprobate.

The youth hearing theſe unjuſt aſperſions, trembled with reſentment through every limb, aſſuring the upbraider that he conſidered her as an object of compaſſion; "for without all doubt, ſaid he, your diabolical rancour muſt be ſeverely puniſhed by the thorns of your own conſcience, which this very inſtant taxes you with the malice

lice and falſehood of your reproaches. As for my ſiſter, I bleſs God that you have not been able to infect her with your unnatural prejudice, which becauſe ſhe is too juſt, too virtuous, too humane to imbibe, you reject her as an alien to your blood, and turn her out unprovided into a barbarous world. But even there your vitious purpoſe ſhall be defeated; that ſame providence that ſcreened me from the cruelty of your hate ſhall extend its protection to her, until I ſhall find it convenient to aſſert by law that right of maintenance which nature, it ſeems, hath beſtowed upon us in vain. In the mean time, you will enjoy the ſatisfaction of paying an undivided attention to that darling ſon, whoſe amiable qualities have ſo long engaged and engroſſed your love and eſteem."

This freedom of expoſtulation exalted his mother's ire to mere frenzy; ſhe curſed him with the bitterеſt imprecations, and raved like a Bedlamite at the door, which ſhe attempted to burſt open. Her efforts were ſeconded by her favourite ſon, who denounced vengeance againſt Peregrine, made furious aſſaults againſt the lock, which reſiſted all their applications, until our hero eſpying his friends Gauntlet and Pipes ſtepping over a ſtile that ſtood about a furlong from the window, called them to his aſſiſtance; giving them to underſtand how he was beſieged, he deſired they would keep off his mother, that he might the more eaſily ſecure his ſiſter Julia's retreat. The young ſoldier entered accordingly, and poſting himſelf between Mrs. Pickle and the door, gave the ſignal to his friend, who lifting up his ſiſter in his arms, carried her ſafe without the clutches

of this ſhe-dragon, while Pipes with his cudgel kept young maſter at bay.

The mother being thus deprived of her prey, ſprung upon Gauntlet like a lioneſs robbed of her whelps, and he muſt have ſuffered ſorely in the fleſh, had he not prevented her miſchievous intent by ſeizing both her wriſts, and ſo keeping her at due diſtance. In attempting to diſengage herſelf from his graſp, ſhe ſtruggled with ſuch exertion, and ſuffered ſuch agony of paſſion at the ſame time, that ſhe actually fell into a ſevere fit, during which ſhe was put to bed, and the confederates retired, without further moleſtation.

In the mean time, Peregrine was not a little perplexed about the diſpoſal of his ſiſter whom he had reſcued. He could not endure the thoughts of ſaddling the commodore with a new expence; and he was afraid of undertaking the charge of Julia, without his benefactor's advice and direction: for the preſent, however, he carried her to the houſe of a gentleman in the neighbourhood, whoſe lady was her godmother, where ſhe was received with great tenderneſs and condolance; and he purpoſed to inquire for ſome creditable houſe, where ſhe might be genteely boarded in his abſence, reſolving to maintain her from the ſavings of his own allowance, which he thought might very well bear ſuch deduction. But this intention was fruſtrated by the publication of the whole affair, which was divulged next day, and ſoon reached the ears of Trunnion, who chid his godſon for having concealed the adventure; and, with the approbation of his wife, ordered him to bring Julia forthwith to the gariſon. The young gentleman, with tears of gratitude in his eyes,

eyes, explained his deſign of maintaining her at his own expence, and earneſtly begged that he might not be deprived of that ſatisfaction. But his uncle was deaf to all his intreaties, and inſiſted upon her living in the gariſon, though for no other reaſon than that of being company to her aunt, who, he obſerved, was loſt for want of converſation.

Julia was accordingly brought home, and ſettled under the tuition of Mrs. Trunnion, who, whatever face ſhe might put on the matter, could have diſpenſed with the ſociety of her niece: though ſhe was not without hope of gratifying her pique to Mrs. Pickle, by the intelligence ſhe would receive from the daughter of that lady's œconomy and domeſtic behaviour. The mother herſelf ſeemed conſcious of this advantage which her ſiſter-in law had now gained over her, being as much chagrined at the news of Julia's reception in the gariſon, as if ſhe had heard of her own huſband's death. She even tortured her invention to propagate calumnies againſt the reputation of her own daughter, whom ſhe ſlandered in all companies; ſhe exclaimed againſt the commodore as an old ruffian who ſpirited up a rebellion among her children, and imputed the hoſpitality of his wife, in countenancing them, to nothing elſe but her inveterate enmity to their mother, whom they had diſobliged. She now inſiſted in the moſt peremptory terms, upon her huſband's renouncing all commerce with the old lad of the caſtle and his adherents; and Mr. Gamaliel having by this time contracted other friendſhips, readily ſubmitted to her will, nay even refuſed to communicate with the commodore one

night, when they happened to meet by accident at the public houſe.

CHAP. XXXI.

The commodore ſends a challenge to Gamaliel, *and is impoſed upon by a waggiſh invention of the lieutenant,* Peregrine *and* Gauntlet.

THIS affront Trunnion could by no means digeſt: he adviſed with the lieutenant upon the ſubject; and the reſult of their conſultation was a defiance which the old commander ſent to Pickle, demanding that he would meet him at ſuch a place on horſeback with a brace of piſtols, and give ſatisfaction for the ſlight he had put upon him.

Nothing could have afforded more pleaſure to Jack, than the acceptance of this challenge, which he delivered verbally to Mr. Gamaliel, who was called out from the club at Tunley's for that purpoſe. The nature of this meſſage had an inſtantaneous effect upon the conſtitution of the pacifick Pickle, whoſe bowels yearned with apprehenſion, and underwent ſuch violent agitation on the ſpot, that one would have thought the operation proceeded from ſome ſevere joke of the apothecary which he had ſwallowed in his beer.

The meſſenger deſpairing of a ſatisfactory anſwer, left him in this woeful condition; and being loth to loſe any opportunity of raiſing the

laugh againſt the commodore, went immediately and communicated the whole affair to the young gentlemen, intreating them, for the love of God, to concert ſome means of bringing old Hannibal into the field. The two friends reliſhed the propoſal, and after ſome deliberation, it was reſolved that Hatchway ſhould tell Trunnion his invitation was accepted by Gamaliel, who would meet him at the place appointed, with his ſecond, to morrow in the twilight, becauſe if either ſhould fall, the other would have the better chance for eſcaping in the dark; that Godfrey ſhould perſonate old Pickle's friend, and Peregrine repreſent his own father, while the lieutenant ſhould take care in loading the piſtols to keep out the ſhot, ſo as that no damage might be done in the rencounter.

Theſe circumſtances being adjuſted, the lieutenant returned to his principal with a moſt thundering reply from his antagoniſt, whoſe courageous behaviour, though it could not intimidate, did not fail to aſtoniſh the commodore, who aſcribed it to the ſpirit of his wife, which had inſpired him. Trunnion that inſtant deſired his counſellor to prepare his cartridge-box, and order the quieteſt horſe in the ſtable to be kept ready ſaddled for the occaſion; his eye ſeemed to lighten with alacrity and pleaſure at the proſpect of ſmelling gun powder once more before his death; and when Jack adviſed him to make his will, in caſe of accident, he rejected his counſel with diſdain, ſaying, "What! doſt think that Hawſer Trunnion, who has ſtood the fire of ſo many floating batteries, runs any riſk from the louſy pops of a land-man? Thou ſhalt ſee, thou ſhalt ſee how I'll make him lower his topſails." Next day

Peregrine and the ſoldier provided themſelves with horſes at the public houſe, from whence, at the deſtined hour, they rode to the field of battle, each of them being muffled in a great coat, which, with the dimneſs of the light, effectually ſhielded them from the knowledge of the one-eyed commander, who having taken horſe, on pretence of enjoying the freſh air, ſoon appeared with Hatchway in his rear. When they came within ſight of each other, the ſeconds advanced, in order to divide the ground, and regulate the meaſures of the combat; when it was determined by mutual conſent, that two piſtols ſhould be diſcharged on each ſide, and that if neither ſhould prove deciſive, recourſe muſt be had to the broad-ſwords, in order to aſcertain the victory. Theſe articles being ſettled, the opponents rode forward to their reſpective ſtations, when Peregrine cocking his piſtol, and preſenting, counterfeited his father's voice, bidding Trunnion take care of his remaining eye. The commodore took his advice, being unwilling to hazard his day-light, and very deliberately oppoſed the patched ſide of his face to the muzzle of his antagoniſt's piece, deſiring him to do his duty without further jaw. The young man accordingly fired, and the diſtance being ſmall, the wad of his piſtol took place with a ſmart ſtroke on the forehead of Trunnion, who miſtaking it for a ball, which he thought was lodged in his brain, ſpurred up his ſteed in a ſtate of deſperation towards his antagoniſt, and holding his piece within two yards of his body, let it off, without any regard to the laws of battle. Surpriſed and enraged to ſee it had made no impreſſion, he hallooed in a terrible tone, "O! damn ye, you have got your netting ſtuffed, I ſee,"

ſee;" and advancing, diſcharged his ſecond piſtol ſo near his godſon's head, that had he not been defended by his great coat, the powder muſt have ſcorched his face. Having thus thrown away his fire, he remained at the mercy of Peregrine, who clapping the piece he had in reſerve to his head, commanded him to beg his life, and aſk pardon for his preſumption. The commodore made no reply to this imperious injunction, but dropping his piſtol, and unſheathing his broadſword in an inſtant, attacked our hero with ſuch incredible agility, that if he had not made ſhift to ward off the ſtroke with his piece, the adventure, in all likelihood, would have turned out a very tragical joke. Peregrine finding it would be in vain for him to think of drawing his weapon, or of ſtanding on the defenſive againſt this furious aggreſſor, very fairly clapt ſpurs to his nag, and ſought his ſafety in flight. Trunnion purſued him with infinite eagerneſs, and his ſteed being the better of the two, would have overtaken the fugitive to his peril, had he not been unfortunately encountered by the boughs of a tree, that happened to ſtand on his blind ſide, and incommoded him ſo much, that he was fain to quit his ſword, and lay hold on the mane, in order to maintain his ſeat. Perry perceiving his diſaſter, wheeled about, and now finding leiſure to produce his weapon, returned upon his diſarmed foe, brandiſhing his Ferrara, threatning to make him ſhorter by the head, if he would not immediately crave quarter and yield. There was nothing farther from the intention of the old gentleman than ſuch ſubmiſſion, which he flatly refuſed to pay, alledging that he had already compelled his enemy to clap on all his ſails, and

that his own preſent misfortune was owing to accident, all one as if a ſhip ſhould be attacked, after ſhe had been obliged to heave her guns overboard in a ſtorm.

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this remonſtrance, the lieutenant interpoſed, and taking cognizance of the caſe, eſtabliſhed a truce, until he and the other ſecond ſhould diſcuſs and decide upon the merits of the cauſe. They accordingly retired to a ſmall diſtance, and after having conferred a few minutes, Hatchway returned, and pronounced the commodore vanquiſhed by the chance of war.

Never was rage more tranſported than that which took poſſeſſion of old Hannibal, when he heard the ſentence: it was ſome time before he could utter aught, except the reproachful expreſſion, *You lie!* which he repeated more than twenty times, in a ſort of delirious inſenſibility. When he recovered the further uſe of ſpeech, he abuſed the arbitrators with ſuch bitter invectives, renouncing their ſentence, and appealing to another trial, that the confederates began to repent of having carried the joke ſo far; and Peregrine, in order to appeaſe his choler, owned himſelf overcome.

This acknowledgment calmed the tumult of his wrath, though he could not for ſome days forgive the lieutenant; and the two young gentlemen rode back to Tunley's, while Hatchway, taking the commodore's horſe by the bridle, reconducted him to his manſion, growling all the way to Jack for his unjuſt and unfriendly decree; though he could not help obſerving, as how he had made his words good, in making his adverſary ſtrike his top-ſails: "And yet (ſaid he) before

fore God! I think the fellow's head is made of a wooll-pack; for my ſhot rebounded from his face like a wad of ſpun-yarn from the walls of a ſhip. But if ſo be that ſon of a bitch of a tree hadn't come athwart my weather-bow, d'ye ſee, I'll be damned if I hadn't ſnapt his main-yard in the ſlings, and mayhap let out his bulge water into the bargain." He ſeemed particularly vain of this exploit, which dwelt upon his imagination, and was cheriſhed as the child of his old age; for tho' he could not with decency rehearſe it to the young men and his wife at ſupper, he gave ſhrewd hints of his own manhood, even at theſe years, and atteſted Hatchway as a voucher for his mettle; while the triumvirate, diverted by his vanity, enjoyed in ſecret the ſucceſs of their impoſition.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Peregrine *takes leave of his aunt and ſiſter, ſets out from the gariſon, parts with his uncle and* Hatchway *on the road, and with his governor arrives in ſafety at* Dover.

THIS, however, was the laſt effort of invention which they practiſed upon him; and every thing being now prepared for the departure of his godſon, that hopeful youth in two days took leave of all his friends in the neighbourhood. He was cloſetted two whole hours with his aunt, who inriched him with many pious advices, recapitulated all the benefits which, through her means, had been conferred upon him

ſince

ſince his infancy, cautioned him againſt the temptations of lewd women, who bring many a man to a morſel of bread, laid ſtrict injunctions upon him to live in the fear of the Lord and the true proteſtant faith, to eſchew quarrels and contention, to treat Mr. Jolter with reverence and regard, and above all things to abſtain from the beaſtly ſin of drunkenneſs, which expoſed a man to the ſcorn and contempt of his fellow-creatures, and by diveſting him of reaſon and reflexion, renders him fit for all manner of vice and debauchery. She recommended to him œconomy and the care of his health, bad him remember the honour of his family, and in all the circumſtances of his behaviour, aſſured him, that he might always depend upon the friendſhip and generoſity of the commodore. Finally, preſenting him with her own picture ſet in gold, and a hundred guineas from her privy purſe, ſhe embraced him affectionately, and wiſhed him all manner of happineſs and proſperity.

Being thus kindly diſmiſſed by Mrs. Trunnion, he locked himſelf up with his ſiſter Julia, whom he admoniſhed to cultivate her aunt with the moſt complaiſant and reſpectful attention, without ſtooping to any circumſtance of ſubmiſſion that ſhe ſhould judge unworthy of her practice; he proteſted that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to make her amends for the privilege ſhe had forfeited by her affection for him; intreated her to enter into no engagement without his knowledge and approbation; put into her hand the purſe which he had received from his aunt, to defray her pocket expences in his abſence, and parted from her, not without tears, after ſhe had for ſome

minutes

minutes hung about his neck, kiſſing him and weeping in the moſt pathetic ſilence.

Having performed theſe duties of affection and conſanguinity over-night, he went to bed, and was, by his own direction, called at four o'clock in the morning, when he found the poſt-chaiſe, coach and riding-horſes ready at the gate, his friends Gauntlet and Hatchway on foot, the commodore himſelf almoſt dreſſed, and every ſervant in the gariſon aſſembled in the yard, to wiſh him a good journey. Our hero ſhook each of theſe humble friends by the hand, tipping them at the ſame time with marks of his bounty; and was very much ſurprized when he could not perceive his old attendant Pipes among the number. When he expreſſed his wonder at this diſreſpectful omiſſion of Tom, ſome of thoſe preſent ran to his chamber, in order to give him a call, but his hammock and room were both deſerted, and they ſoon return'd with an account of his having eloped. Peregrine was diſturbed at this information, believing that the fellow had taken ſome deſperate courſe in conſequence of his being diſmiſſed from his ſervice, and began to wiſh that he had indulged his inclination, by retaining him ſtill about his perſon. However, as there was now no other remedy, he recommended him ſtrenuouſly to the particular favour and diſtinction of his uncle and Hatchway, in caſe he ſhould appear again; and as he went out of the gate, was ſaluted with three chears by all the domeſtics in the family. The commodore, Gauntlet, lieutenant, Peregrine and Jolter went into the coach together, that they might enjoy each other's converſation as much as poſſible, reſolving to breakfaſt at an inn upon the road, where Trunnion and Hatchway intended

to

to bid our adventurer farewel; the valet de chambre got into the poſt-chaiſe, the French lacquey rode one horſe and led another, one of the valets of the gariſon mounted at the back of the coach; and thus the cavalcade ſet out on the road to Dover. As the commodore could not bear the fatigue of jolting, they travelled at an eaſy pace during the firſt ſtage; ſo that the old gentleman had an opportunity of communicating his exhortations to his godſon, with regard to his conduct abroad; he adviſed him now that he was going into foreign parts, to be upon his guard againſt the fair weather of the French politeſſe, which was no more to be truſted than a whirlpool at ſea. He obſerved that many young men had gone to Paris with good cargoes of ſenſe, and returned with a great deal of canvas, and no ballaſt at all, whereby they became crank all the days of their lives, and ſometimes carried their keels above water. He deſired Mr. Jolter to keep his pupil out of the clutches of thoſe ſharking prieſts who lie in wait to make converts of all young ſtrangers, and in a particular manner cautioned the youth againſt carnal converſation with the Pariſian dames, who, he underſtood, were no better than gaudy fireſhips ready primed with death and deſtruction.

Peregrine liſtened with great reſpect, thanking him for his kind admonitions, which he faithfully promiſed to obſerve. They halted and breakfaſted at the end of the ſtage, where Jolter provided himſelf with a horſe, and the commodore ſettled the method of correſponding with his nephew. The minute of parting being arrived, the old commander wrung his godſon by the hand, ſaying, "I wiſh thee a proſperous voyage and good cheer, my lad; my timbers are now a little crazy, d'ye

ſee;

ſee; and God knows if I ſhall keep aſloat 'till ſuch time as I ſee thee again; but howſomever, hap what will, thou wilt find thyſelf in a condition to keep in the line with the beſt of thy fellows." He then reminded Gauntlet of his promiſe to call at the gariſon in his return from Dover, and imparted ſomething in a whiſper to the governor, while Jack Hatchway, unable to ſpeak, pulled his hat over his eyes, and ſqueezing Peregrine by the hand, gave him an iron piſtol of curious workmanſhip, as a memorial of his friendſhip. Our youth, who was not unmoved on this occaſion, received the pledge, which he acknowledged with the preſent of a ſilver tobacco-box, bought for that purpoſe; and the two lads of the caſtle getting into the coach, were driven homewards, in a ſtate of ſilent dejection.

Godfrey and Peregrine ſeated themſelves in the poſt-chaiſe, and Jolter, the valet de chambre and lacquey, beſtriding their beaſts, they proceeded for the place of their deſtination, at which they arrived in ſafety that ſame night, and beſpoke a paſſage in the pacquet-boat which was to ſail next day.

CHAP. XXXIV.

He adjuſts the method of his correſpondence with Gauntlet; *meets by accident with an* Italian *Charlatan, and a certain apothecary, who proves to be a noted character.*

THERE the two friends adjuſted the articles of their future correſpondence, and Peregrine having written a letter to his miſtreſs, where-

wherein he renewed his former vows of eternal fidelity, it was entruſted to the care of her brother, while Mr. Jolter, at the deſire of his pupil, provided an elegant ſupper, and ſome excellent Burgundy, that they might ſpend this eve of his departure with the greater enjoyment.

Things being thus diſpoſed, and a ſervant employed in laying the cloth, their ears were of a ſudden invaded by a ſtrange tumultuous noiſe in the next room, occaſioned by the overthrow of tables, chairs and glaſſes, with odd unintelligible exclamations in broken French, and a jargon of threats in the Welſh dialect. Our young gentlemen ran immediately into the apartment from whence this clamour ſeemed to proceed, and found a thin meagre ſwarthy figure gaſping in all the agony of fear, under the hands of a ſquar, thick, hard-featured man, who collared him with great demonſtrations of wrath, ſaying, "If you was as mighty a magician as Owen Glendower, or the witch of Entor, look you, ay, or as Paul Beor himſelf, I will make pold, by the aſſiſtance of Got, and in his Majeſty's naam, to ſeize and ſecure, and confine and confront you, until ſuch time as you ſuffer and endure and undergo the pains and penalties of the law, for your diabolical practices. Shentlements, added he, turning to our adventurers, I take you to witneſs that I proteſt and aſſert and avow that this perſon is as pig a necromancer as you would deſire to behold; and I ſupplicate and beſeech and intreat of you, that he may be prought pefore his petters, and compelled to give an account of his compact and commerce with the imps of darkneſs, look you; for as I am a chriſtian ſoul, and hope for joyful reſurrection, I have this pleſſed evening ſeen him perform

perform ſuch things as could not be done without the aid and inſtruction and connivance of the Tevil."

Gauntlet ſeemed to enter into the ſentiments of this Welſh reformer, and actually lad hold on the delinquent's ſhoulder, crying, "Damn the raſcal! I'll lay any wager that he's a Jeſuit; for none of his order travel without a familiar." But Peregrine, who looked upon the affair in another point of view, interpoſed in behalf of the ſtranger, whom he freed from his aggreſſors, obſerving that there was no occaſion to uſe violence, and aſked in French what he had done to incur the cenſure of the informer. The poor foreigner, more dead than alive, anſwered that he was an Italian charlatan, who had practiſed with ſome reputation in Padua, until he had the misfortune to attract the notice of the Inquiſition, by exhibiting certain wonderful performances by his ſkill in natural knowledge, which that tribunal conſidered as the effects of ſorcery, and perſecuted him accordingly; ſo that he had been fain to make a precipitate retreat into France, where not finding his account in his talents, he was now arrived in England, with a view of practiſing his art in London; and that in conſequence of a ſpecimen which he had given to a company below, the choleric gentleman had followed him up ſtairs to his own apartment, and aſſaulted him in that inhoſpitable manner. He therefore earneſtly begged that our hero would take him under his protection; and if he entertained the leaſt ſuſpicion of his employing preternatural means in the operations of his art, he would freely communicate all the ſecrets in his poſſeſſion.

The youth diſpelled his apprehenſion, by aſ-

ſuring

ſuring him that he was in no danger of ſuffering for his art in England, where, if ever he ſhould be queſtioned by the zeal of ſuperſtitious individuals, he had nothing to do but appeal to the next juſtice of the peace, who would immediately acquit him of the charge, and puniſh his accuſers for their impertinence and indiſcretion.

He then told Gauntlet and the Welſhman, that the ſtranger had a good action againſt them for an aſſault, by virtue of an act of parliament, which makes it criminal for any perſon to accuſe another of ſorcery and witchcraft, theſe idle notions being now juſtly exploded by all ſenſible men. Mr. Jolter, who had by this time joined the company, could not help ſignifying his diſſent from this opinion of his pupil, which he endeavoured to invalidate by the authority of ſcripture, quotations from the fathers, and the confeſſion of many wretches who ſuffered death for having carried on correſpondence with evil ſpirits, together with the evidence of Satan's Inviſible World, and Moreton's hiſtory of Witchcraft.

The ſoldier corroborated theſe teſtimonies by facts that had happened within the ſphere of his own knowledge, and in particular mentioned the caſe of an old woman of the pariſh in which he was born, who uſed to transform herſelf into the ſhapes of ſundry animals, and was at laſt killed by ſmall ſhot in the character of an hare. The Welſhman thus ſupported, expreſſed his ſurprize at hearing that the legiſlature had ſhewn ſuch tenderneſs for criminals of ſo dark a hue; and offered to prove by undeniable inſtances, that there was not a mountain in Wales, which had not been in his memory the ſcene of necromancy and witchcraft; "Wherefore, ſaid he, I am aſ-

ſuredly

ſuredly more than apove aſtoniſhed and confounded and concerned, that the parliament of Great Pritain ſhould in their great wiſdoms and their prudence, and their penetration, give countenance and encouragement, look you, to the works of darkneſs and the empire of Pelzepup; ofer and apove the evidence of holy writ, and thoſe writers who have been quoted by that aggurate and learned ſhentleman, we are informed by profane hiſtory, of the pribbles and pranks of the old ſerpent, in the bortents and oragles of antiquity; as you will find in that moſt excellent hiſtorian Bolypius, and Titus Liſius; ay, and moreofer, in the commentaries of Julius Cæſar himſelf, who, as the ole 'orld knows, was a moſt famous, and a moſt faliant, and a moſt wiſe, and a moſt prudent, and a moſt fortunate cheiftan, and a moſt renowned orator; ay, and a moſt elegant writer to boot."

Peregrine did not think proper to enter the liſts of diſpute with three ſuch obſtinate antagoniſts; but contented himſelf with ſaying, that he believed it would be no difficult matter to impugn the arguments they had advanced; though he did not find himſelf at all diſpoſed to undertake the taſk, which muſt of courſe break in upon the evening's entertainment. He therefore invited the Italian to ſupper, and aſked the ſame favour of his accuſer, who ſeemed to have ſomething curious and characteriſtic in his manner and diſpoſition, reſolving to make himſelf an eye-witneſs of thoſe ſurprizing feats, which had given offence to the choleric Briton. This ſcrupulous gentleman thanked our hero for his courteſy, but declined communicating with the ſtranger, until his character ſhould be further explained; upon which

which his inviter, after ſome converſation with the charlatan, aſſured him that he would himſelf undertake for the innocence of his art; and then he was prevailed upon to favour them with his company.

In the courſe of the converſation, Peregrine learnt that the Welchman was a ſurgeon of Canterbury, who had been called into a conſultation at Dover, and underſtanding that his name was Morgan, took the liberty of aſking if he was not the perſon ſo reſpectfully mentioned in the Adventures of Roderick Random. Mr. Morgan aſſumed a look of gravity and importance at this interrogation, and ſcrewing up his mouth, anſwered, "Mr. Rantum, my goot ſir, I believe upon my conſcience and ſalfation, is my very good frient and wellwiſher; and he and I have been companions and meſſmates and fellow-ſufferers, look you; but nevertheleſs for all that, peradventure, he hath not pehaved with ſo much complaiſance and affability and reſpect, as I might have expected from him; pecauſe he hath revealed and tivulged and bupliſhed our private affairs, without my knowledge and privity and conſent; but as Got is my Saviour, I think he had no evil intention in his pelly; and though there be certain perſons, look you, who, as I am told, take upon them to laugh at his deſcriptions of my perſon, deportment and converſation, I do affirm and maintain, and inſiſt with my heart, and my plood and my ſoul, that thoſe perſons are no petter than ignorant aſſes, and that they know not how to diſcern and diſtinguiſh and define true ridicule, or as Ariſtotle calls it, the *to Geloion*, no more, look you, than a herd of mountain goats; for I will make pold to obſerve, and I hope this

goot

goot company will be of the ſame opinion, that there is nothing ſaid of me in that performance, which is unworthy of a chriſtian and a ſhentleman."

Our young gentleman and his friends acquieſced in the juſtneſs of his obſervation. Peregrine particularly aſſured him, that from reading the book he had conceived the utmoſt regard and veneration for his character; and that he thought himſelf extremely fortunate in having this opportunity of enjoying his converſation. Morgan, not a little proud of ſuch advances from a perſon of Peregrine's appearance, returned the compliment with a profuſion of civility, and in the warmth of acknowledgment, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing him and his company at his houſe in Canterbury: "I will not pretend, or preſume, kind ſir, ſaid he, to entertain you according to your merits and deſerts; but you ſhall be as welcome to my poor cottage, and my wife and family, as the Prince of Wales himſelf; and it ſhall go hard, if one way or other, I do not find ways and means of making you confeſs that there is ſome goot fellowſhip in an antient Priton: for though I am no petter than a ſimple apothecary, I have as goot plood circulating in my veins, as any he in the county; and I can deſcribe and delineate and demonſtrate my pedigree to the ſatisfaction of the 'ole 'orld; and moreofer, by Got's goot providence and aſſiſtance, I can afford to treat my friend with a joint of goot mutton, and a pottle of excellent wine, and no tradeſman can peard me with a bill." He was congratulated on his happy ſituation, and aſſured that our youth would viſit him on his return from France, provided he ſhould take Canterbury in his rout.

As Peregrine manifeſted an inclination of being acquainted with the ſtate of his affairs, he very complaiſantly ſatisfied his curioſity, by giving him to know that his ſpouſe had left off breeding after having bleſſed him with two boys and a girl, who were ſtill alive and well; that he lived in good eſteem with his neighbours, and by his practice, which was conſiderably extended immediately after the publication of Roderick Random, had ſaved ſome thouſand pounds. He had begun to think of retiring among his own relations in Glamorganſhire, though his wife had made objection to this propoſal, and oppoſed the execution of it with ſuch obſtinacy, that he had been at infinite pains in aſſerting his own prerogative, by convincing her both from reaſon and example, that he was king and prieſt in his own family, and that ſhe owed the moſt implicit ſubmiſſion to his will. He likewiſe informed the company, that he had lately ſeen his friend Roderick, who had come from London on purpoſe to viſit him, after having gained his law-ſuit with Mr. Topehall, who was obliged to pay Narciſſa's fortune; that Mr. Random, in all appearance, led a very happy life in the converſation of his father and bedfellow, by whom he enjoyed a ſon and daughter; and that Morgan had received in a preſent from him, a piece of very fine linen of his wife's own making, ſeveral kits of ſalmon, and two caſks of pickled pork, the moſt delicate he had ever taſted; together with a barrel of excellent herrings for ſalmagundy, which he knew to be his favourite diſh.

This topick of converſation being diſcuſſed, the Italian was deſired to exhibit a ſpecimen of his art, and in a few minutes conducted the company

into the next room, where, to their great aſtoniſhment and affright, they beheld a thouſand ſerpents winding along the cieling. Morgan, ſtruck with this phænomenon, which he had not ſeen before, began to utter exorciſms with great devotion, Mr. Jolter ran terrified out of the room, Gauntlet drew his hanger, and Peregrine himſelf was diſconcerted. The operator perceiving their confuſion, deſired them to retire, and calling them back in an inſtant, there was not a viper to be ſeen. He raiſed their admiration by ſundry other performances, and the Welſhman's former opinion and abhorrence of his character began to recur, when, in conſideration of the civility with which he had been treated, this Italian imparted to them all the methods by which he had acted ſuch wonders, that were no other than the effects of natural cauſes curiouſly combined; ſo that Morgan became a convert to his ſkill, aſked pardon for the ſuſpicion he had entertained, and invited the ſtranger to paſs a few days with him at Canterbury. The ſcruples of Godfrey and Jolter were removed at the ſame time, and Peregrine teſtified his ſatisfaction by an handſome gratuity which he beſtowed upon their entertainer.

The evening being ſpent in this ſociable manner, every man retired to his reſpective chamber, and next morning they breakfaſted together, when Morgan declared he would ſtay 'till he ſhould ſee our hero fairly embarked, that he might have the pleaſure of Mr. Gauntlet's company to his own habitation; mean while, by the ſkipper's advice, the ſervants were ordered to carry a ſtore of wine and proviſion on board in caſe of accident; and as the packet-boat could not ſail before one o'clock, the company walked

up

up hill to viſit the caſtle, where they ſaw the ſword of Julius Cæſar, and Queen Elizabeth's pocket-piſtol, repeated Shakeſpear's deſcription, while they ſurvey'd the chalky cliffs on each ſide, and caſt their eyes towards the city of Calais, that was obſcured by a thick cloud which did not much regale their eye-ſight, becauſe it ſeemed to portend foul weather.

Having viewed every thing remarkable in this place, they returned to the pier, where after the compliments of parting, and an affectionate embrace between the two young gentlemen, Peregrine and his governor ſtept aboard, the ſails were hoiſted, and they went to ſea with a fair wind, while Godfrey, Morgan and the conjurer walked back to the inn, from whence they ſet out for Canterbury before dinner.

The End of the FIRST VOLUME.